



*THE HUTH LIBRARY.*

---

THE WORKS

OF

GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

*VOL. III.*

MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.

THE TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE (1597).

STORY OF MERCY HARVEY.

GLOSSARIAL-INDEX WITH NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.



What is this Life? the play of passion ;—  
Our mirth,—the Musick of Diuision ;—  
Our Mothers wombes the tyreing houses be,  
Where we are drest for Liues short comedie ;  
The Earth y<sup>e</sup> Stage,—Heauen the Spectator is,—  
Who sitts and veiues whoeoere doth act amiss ;  
Our graves, which hyde vs from y<sup>e</sup> scorching sunn,  
Are like drawne curtaines when y<sup>e</sup> play is done ;  
Thus acting play wee to our latest rest ;  
But then we die in earnest, not in jest.

RALEIGH (*Pickering MS.* fol. 113, collated with the  
*Ashmolean MSS.* 36 f. 35 : 38 f. 154) : HANNAH's  
*Wotton, Raleigh, and others* (1857), pp. 81-2.



10/10/10

10/10/10

10/10/10

10/10/10

The Smith Library

ELIZABETHAN JACOBLAN

*Language in Poetry, Drama*

BOOKS

IN  
VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

*From the Library of*



Henry Bush Osgood

*Author of "The History of the English Language"*

*Published by Houghton, Mifflin & Co., Boston, U.S.A.*

BY THE

*Smithsonian Institution, U.S.A.*

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY



The Duth Library.

THE WORKS

OF

GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

*IN THREE VOLUMES.*

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED  
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),  
*St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.*

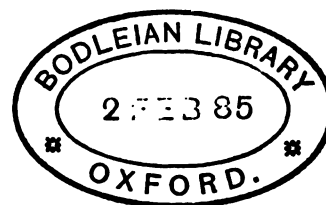
VOL. III.

MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.  
THE TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE (1597).  
STORY OF MERCY HARVEY.  
GLOSSARIAL-INDEX WITH NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1885.

50 Copies.]



2698.d.15.

---

*Printed by Hoard, Watson, and Viny, Limited, London and Glasgow*



## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL . . .	vii
TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE, GENTLEMAN . . .	1
STORY OF MERCY HARVEY, SISTER OF DR. GABRIEL HARVEY, LOVE-SUIT WITH A NOBLEMAN . . .	73
GLOSSARIAL-INDEX, INCLUDING NOTES AND ILLUS- TRATIONS . . . . .	99

---

*Printed by Hasell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.*

There is no remedy for time misspent  
No healing for the waste of idleness,  
Whose very languor is a punishment  
Heavier than active souls can feel or guess.  
O hours of indolence and discontent,  
Not now to be redeemed! ye sting not less  
Because I know this span of life was lent  
For lofty duties, not for selfishness.  
Not to be wiled away in aimless dreams,  
But to improve ourselves, and serve mankind,  
Life and its choicest faculties were given.  
Man should be ever better than he seems :  
And shape his acts, and discipline his mind,  
To walk adorning earth, with hope of heaven.

SIR AUBREY DE VERE : *Song of Faith* (1842), p. 143.

## MEMORIAL INTRODUCTION— CRITICAL.

BY THE EDITOR.

IT would be to fall in with that "busy idleness" pungently censured by HARVEY himself, elaborately to estimate his Life or Writings. Neither the Life nor the Writing goes beyond (as already put) the "Curiosities of Literature." Emphatically the 'Life' must be pronounced a meagre and inadequate one placed over-against its possibilities and opportunities and useless prolongation; whilst the more one reads his books the more provocative are they, if not of contempt, of righteous indignation. His bearing to the last toward the 'dead' Greene, the 'dead' Marlowe, the 'dead' Perne, the living Nashe and Countess of Pembroke, raises one's gorge even at this late day. I propose in this second half of my Memorial-Introduction simply to accentuate critically these several things, and to add certain miscellaneous observations and illustrations of some other points, under them.

I. *The 'dead Greene.'* Our references (*s.n.*) will guide the critical Reader to the main passages in these unhappy books about ROBERT GREENE; but throughout, and in most sudden and unexpected places—like the outdarting of a cobra, without its warning

hiss—there are others. Perhaps the worst of all his truculencies and evil-speaking occur in his final book, the “Trimming of Thomas Nashe”; which for malice and carefully wrought-on insult and slander stands alone in our literature. The aggravation and condemnation of the whole treatment lie in this—that by the assailant's own admission the solitary cause of offence was Greene's jestful allusion to Harvey's father having been a “Rope-maker.” We search in vain for one jot or tittle beyond this; and it is due to the honour of our literature that occasion so slight and slender for opprobrium and ribaldry so outrageous, should be branded. The way in which he professes “not to bite the dead” or to “war with ghostes,” while at the same time he renews that warfare, is simply infamous. His going to the ‘landlady’ of the deceased author and worming out of her every possible scrap of unclean and rancid gossip that he could, makes us think of a ghoul rather than of a man, much less a (professed) scholar. How infamous can only be realized as we read and re-read the hard sanctimoniousness of such a passage as the following on Greene's last letter, which ended, “if hee, and his wife had not succoured me, *I had died in the streets.*” Thus—

“Oh what notable matter were here for a greene head, or Iucianicall conceit: that would take pleasure in the paine of such sorry distressed creatures? whose afflicted case, to euery charitable, or compassionate mind, cannot but seeme most commiserable, if not for their owne cause, yet for Gods sake: who deserueth infinitely of them, whome hee acquitteth, not according to judgement, but according to mercy. I rather hope of the deade, as I wish to the liuinge, that Grace might finally abounde, where wickednesse

did ouerflow: and that Christ in his diuine goodnesse shoulde miraculously forgiue the man, that in his diuelish badnesse blasphemously reuled God. The dead bite not: and I am none of those, that bite the dead. When I begin to conflict with ghostes, then looke for my Confutation of his fine Quippe or quaint Dispute, whome his sweete hostisse, for a tender farewell, crowned with a Garland of Bayes: to shew, that a tenth Muse honoured him more being deade, then all the nine honoured him alieue. I know not whether *Skelton*, *Elderton*, or some like flourishing Poet were so enterred: it was his owne request, and his Nurses deuotion: and happily some of his fauourites may imitate the example. One that wished him a better lodging, then in a poore Iourneymans house, & a better graue, then in that Church-yard in Bedlam, hath perfourmed a little peece of greater duety to a Laureat Poet.

*Here lies the man, whome mistrisse Isam crown'd with bayes;  
Shee, shee, that ioyde to heare, her Nightingales sweete layes.*

Which an other no sooner read, but he immediatly subscribed: as speaking to the ignorant passenger.

*Heere Bedlam is: and heere a Poet garish,  
Gaily bedeck'd, like forhorse of the parish.*

“Other Epitaphes, and funerall deuotions I am promised by some, that deeply affect inspired Bardes, and the adopted sonnes of the Muses: but you may imagine, I haue smal superfluity of leysure, to entend such businesse: and yet nothing of frend, or foe, can be vnwelcome vnto mee, that sauoureth of Witte, or relisheth of Humanity, or tasteth of any good” (vol. i., pp. 172-3).

It must be remembered, further, that these “other epitaphes and funerall deuotions” he carefully procured and preserved and——published at the close of his “Foure Letters” (vol. i., p. 238 onward). What a commentary that on his “I am none of thos that bite the dead”! Nor less cruel his

x *MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.*

balanced sentences immediately preceding (vol. i, pp. 168-9). Then, in the "lowest deep" a still lower, his reiteration, as from the mouths of others, of his foulest and worst charges, as thus—

"Alase, that anie shoulde say, as I haue heard diuers affirme: His witte was nothing but a minte of knauerie; himself a deuiser of iugling feates: a forger of couetous practises: an Inuentour of monstrous oathes: a derider of all religions: a contemner of God, and man: a desperate Lucianist: an abhominable Aretinist: an Arch-athiest: and he arch-deserued to be well hanged seauen yeares agoe. Twenty, and twentie such familiar speeches I ouer-passe: and bury the whole Legendary of his Life, & Death, in the Sepulchre of eternal Silence. I will not condemne, or censure his workes, which I neuer did so much as superficially ouerrunne, but as some fewe of them occursiully presented themselues in Stationers shops, and some other houses of my acquaintance. But I pray God they haue not done more harme by corruption of manners, then good by quickening of witte: and I would, some Buyers had either more Reason to discerne, or lesse Appetite to desire such Nouels. The world is full inough of fooleries: though the humor be not feasted with such luxurious, and riotous Pamphlets" (vol. i., pp. 190-1).

With reference to his allegation of 'impurity' and his accusation of obscenity and vileness against Greene's books, these books themselves falsify them. In reversal of Herrick's famous pleading, whatever of stain and shame and ignominy may have belonged to his life, his books (even those of 'Coney-catching,' which certes offered ample opportunity for a prurient mind uttering itself) are free of them, in strange contrast with much that was contemporary. Then, how is Harvey forgivable that in the knowledge of the urgency and pathos of

the 'death-bed repentance' and the infinitely moving "written words" of his posthumous books, he kept silence, or momentarily broke it to scorn and put tongue in's cheek, on all the remorse and penitence, and remembered alone the sorrowful sinning. The supreme verdict-warning of Shakespeare (in the lips of sister pleading for brother) leaps to one's tongue in weighing and counter-weighting the two men:—

"*Isabella* . . . . Believe this,  
No ceremony that to great ones 'longs,  
Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword,  
The marshal's truncheon nor the judge's robe,  
Become them with one half so good a grace  
As mercy does.  
If he had been as you, and you as he,  
You would have slipp'd like him; but he, like you,  
Would not have been so stern. . . .

. . . . . Alas, alas!  
Why, all the souls that were, were forfeit once;  
And He that might the vantage best have took,  
Found out the remedy. How would you be,  
If He, which is the top of judgment, should  
But judge you as you are? O think on that;  
And mercy then will breathe within your lips,  
Like man new-made" (*Measure for Measure* ii. 2).

No touch of ruth, no throb of self-knowledge, no recognition of circumstance, no arrest of mean passion, mitigated Harvey's 'memories' of the 'dead Poet' and contrite sinner. I risk iteration and reiteration that I may win reprobation of self-conceit so malignant and malignancy so self-conceited. I advisedly add this to my prior verdict in 'Memorial-Introduction—Biographical' (vol. i., pp. xlix). How absolutely self-ignorant Dr. Gabriel Harvey was, let



this witness:—"As for Envy or hatred to any party : I did euer abhorre them both : and I imagine there is not any, that either more resolutely disdayneth the one, or more peremptorily detesteth the other " (vol. i., p. 174). Kindred with this is his fatuous non-perception of the inequality of the combat as between Nashe and himself. His superior airs and serene 'contempt' take a look of *grotesquerie* (see vol. ii., p. 233), whilst his eager swallowing of the 'incense' of "worshipfull gentleman" (*ib.*, p. 234) excites our laughter. He had no notion how (really) Sir John Harington was taking him off in his well-known Epigram.

2. *The 'dead Marlowe.'* If it be to Harvey's irreversible condemnation that he had no tear for Greene's tears, no place for his penitence, equally in kind does it reveal the narrow *calibre* of the man that he had no perception of the superb genius of CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE. Our references (in Glossarial-Index, *s.n.*) on examination will be found to be mere spitting on him. He had no ear for his "mighty line," no imagination to be flushed with the splendour of his creations, no soul to grasp the magnificence of his portraitures, no human emotion over the tragedy of his early death. The last is the more absolutely discreditable (if the word be not too limp and tame) in that Harvey imagined the poet of "Dr. Faustus" to have died of the Plague (*not* in the appalling way he actually did). I had discerned this as contained in the close of the "Newe Letter," but as my friend Mr. A. H. Bullen has anticipated me in his notice of it, I willingly accept the account

from him in his just-published most admirable edition of Marlowe's Works. It thus runs—

“ I must now direct the reader's attention to a strange 'Sonet' and stranger 'Postscript' and 'Glosse,' printed at the end of Gabriel Harvey's *Newe Letter of Notable Contents*, 1593. Dyce (following Collier) quoted the last line of the 'Sonet,' but none of Marlowe's editors has referred to the 'Postscript' and 'Glosse'; so I make no apology for giving the pieces in full.

*Gorgon, or the Wonderfull yeare.*

St. Fame *dispos'd to cunnycatch the world,*  
*Vprear'd a wonderment of Eighty Eight :*  
*The Earth, addreading to be ouerwhurld,*  
*What now auailles, quoth She, my ballance weight ?*  
*The Circle smyl'd to see the Center feare :*  
*The wonder was, no wonder fell that yeare.*

*Wonders enhaunse their powre in numbers odd :*  
*The fatalle yeare of yeares is Ninety Three :*  
*Parma hath kist ; De-maine entreates the rodd :*  
*Warre wondreth, Peace and Spaine in Fraunce to see.*  
*Braue Eckenberg, the dowty Bassa shames :*  
*The Christian Neptune Turkish Vulcane tames.*  
*Nauarre wooes Roome : Charmaine giues Guise the Phy :*  
*Weepe Powles, thy Tamberlaine voutsafes to dye.*

L'enuoy.

The hugest miracle remains behinde,  
*The second Shakerley Rash-swash to binde.*

The Writer's Postscript : or a frendly *Caueat* to the *Second Shakerley* of Powles.

*Slumbring I lay in melancholy bed,*  
*Before the dauning of the sanguin light :*  
*When Eccho shrill, or some Familiar Spright,*  
*Buzzed an Epitaph into my hed.*

Magnifique Mindes, bred of Gargantuas race,  
 In grisly weedes His Obsequies waiment,  
 Whose Corps on Powles, whose mind triūph'd on Kent,  
 Scorning to bate Sir Rodomont an ace.

*I mus'd awhile : and hauing mus'd awhile,  
 Iesu, (quoth I) is that Gargantua minde  
 Conquerd, and left no Scanderbeg behinde ?  
 Vowed he not to Powles A Second bile ?  
 What bile or kibe ? (quoth that same early Spright)  
 Haue you forgot the Scanderbegging wight ?*

Glosse. |

*Is it a Dreame ? or is it the Highest minde  
 That euer haunted Powles, or hunted winde,  
 Bereaft of that same sky-surmounting breath,  
 That breath, that taught the Tempany to swell ?*

*He, and the Plague contended for the game :  
 The hawty man extolles his hideous thoughtes,  
 And gloriously insults vpon poore soules,  
 That plague themselues : for faint harts plague themselues.  
 The tyrant Sicknesse of base-minded slaues,  
 Oh how it dominer's in Coward Lane ?  
 So Surquidry rang-out his larum bell,  
 When he had girn'd at many a dolefull knell.*

*The graund Dissease disdain'd his toade Conceit,  
 And smiling at his tamberlaine contempt,  
 Sternely struck-home the peremptory stroke.  
 He that nor feared God, nor dreaded Diu'll,  
 Nor ought admired, but his wondrous selfe :  
 Like Iunos gawdy Bird, that proudly stares  
 On glittering fan of his triumphant taile :  
 Or like the egly Bugg that scorn'd to dy,  
 And mountes of Glory rear'd in towering witt :  
 Alas : but Babell Pride must kisse the pitt.*

L'enuoy.

*Powles steeple, and a hugyer thing is doune :  
 Beware the next Bull-beggar of the towne.*

————— *Fata immatura vagantur.*

“ Harvey’s *Newe Letter* is dated September 1593, and Marlowe died in the June preceding. The drift of the ‘goggle-eyed sonet of Gorgon’ (as Nashe terms it) and ‘L’enuoy’ plainly is,—‘Marlowe is dead ; it remains to muzzle Nashe.’ The epitaph in the ‘Postscript’ certainly refers to Marlowe, and the meaning of the extraordinary lines ‘I mus’d awhile,’ etc., is the same as in the previous sonnet. But what are we to make of the ‘Glosse’? The only sense to be got out of the lines is that Marlowe had fallen a victim to the plague. We know that the plague was raging at that time in the metropolis. Probably Gabriel Harvey was staying in the country, to be out of the reach of infection, when he wrote his *Newe Letter*. Hearing the report of Marlowe’s death he had taken it for granted, when he raised his whoop of exultation, that the poet had died of the plague. We may be sure that, if he had been acquainted at the time with the true account of Marlowe’s tragic end, he would have gloated over every detail with ghoulish ferocity. Though Marlowe took no active part, so far as we know, in supporting Nashe, he seems not to have attempted to conceal his contempt for the Harveys. In *Howe with you to Saffron Walden*, Nashe reports a saying of Marlowe’s about Gabriel’s younger brother, the Rev. Richard Harvey:—‘Kit Marloe was wont to say that he was an asse, good for nothing but to preach of the Iron Age.’ If Marlowe was accustomed to deliver his opinion about the Harveys after this fashion, the Doctor’s animosity is explicable. In *Pierce’s Supererogation* the vindictive writer exclaims—‘His

[*i.e.* Nashe's] gayest flourishes are but Gascoigne's weedes, or Tarleton's trickes, or Greene's cranks or *Marlowe's bravadoes.*' In the same tract he uses the term 'Marloweism' in the sense of 'irreverence'" (vol. i., pp. lxxv-viii.)

Thus again Harvey's spite because of Marlowe's outspoken ridicule of a younger brother and perchance himself, made him stone-eyed to his prodigious genius.

His sneer "no Religion but precise Marlowisme" (ii. 234) is all he had to say of one of England's 'Mighties.' Personally I am disposed to set down for mythical a great deal of the alleged 'atheism' and profligacy of Christopher Marlowe; and I for one willingly doubt of the traditionary 'tragic end.' With one possessed of so strenuous a nostril for scenting out such carrion gossip, as Gabriel Harvey—ignorant of that 'tragic end,' one may well question if ever it were 'true.' But *the* point to be emphasized is that to Gabriel Harvey his 'mighty' contemporary Christopher Marlowe was—nobody. After that, it is not to be wondered at that Shakespeare is never in the slightest alluded to by him.\*

3. *The 'dead Perne.'* Though somewhat noticeable in a small way, Dr. Andrew Perne (Dean of Ely) is too long forgotten to call for any full notice here or anywhere. He is now mainly of (passing) interest, as having in some unknown shape 'offended' EDMUND SPENSER—probably by insisting too pertinaciously in 'controlling' the course and order of the Poet's studies while at the University. But

\* Contrast the always pathetic and kindly references to 'Kit Marlowe' by Nashe. See Glossarial-Index, *s.n.*

I deem it needful to recall Perne that further insight into Harvey's morbid malignity may be given, and, sooth-to-say, that the uttermost example of his intellectual force may be indicated. To actualize to ourselves the former, I must ask the word 'dead' to be again pondered. The word 'dead' gives new pathos to our emotion on Harvey's treatment of Greene and of Marlowe; in relation to Perne it reveals his cowardice.\* His Letters to Spenser—wherein he assailed Perne—he never meant to be 'put into print,' and he was ready with crawling explanations and apologies (*not* in the etymological sense of 'defences') when called in question for these and other attacks on his University. But his "Pierce's Supererogation" was deliberately published by himself; and in it he has drawn up such a word-portrait of Dean Perne as concentrates within itself all possibilities and enormities of vengeful, despicable malignancy. Two dates are therefore to be noted—first, that Perne died on the 26th of April, 1586; second, that "Pierce's Supererogation" was not published until 1593. In the light (or gloom) of this

\* See vol. ii., p. 302, where Harvey deliberately states that he had all along intended his "eternall memoriall." Then at p. 313 we have this diabolical sentence—"Yet suerly by his favour who could sharply iudge, and durst freely speake; he was a Fox and a halfe, in his whole body, and in euery part of his soule: albeit I will not deny, but he mought in some respectes be a Goose, and after a sort (as it were) an Asse: especially for defeating one without cause, and troubling the same without effect, that for ought he knew, might possibly haue it in him, to requite him aliue, and dead." Tam o' Shanter's wife's nursing of her wrath to keep it warm was nothing to this.

chronology, let the reader turn to and return upon the aforesaid word-portrait. The canvas is relatively vast. It occupies twenty-three pages, over and above other incidental but not accidental allusions and dishonours, and bears traces of the nicest workmanship, the most wistful elaboration. This extraordinary word-portrait will be found in vol. ii., pp. 294—317. As a word-portrait, as a literary production, there is an uncanny power in it, a demoniac strength, a heartless penetrativeness, a volume and vehemence of vocabulary, and a plentitude of gleeful and insolent vengefulness, that in my judgment mark it out as unique in our literature. The man had brains who so wrote. Rubens' painting from the crucified criminal was not more awful. Nashe could not fail secretly to admire it (or at it). The ingenuity with which he works in traits, magnifying and minimizing, deepening and blackening, the dexterity with which he mingles possible fact and insinuation, the raillery that rolls out into devilish cachinnation (one would not call it 'laughter'), and imports out-of-the-way reading (rather than learning) to discredit Perne's learning, assure us that if Gabriel Harvey had had the accomplishment of verse he might have been an immortal satirist, beside whom Donne and Bastard, Hall and Pope had been subordinate. As I read and re-read the long passage indicated, containing this word-portrait, I am conscious that Harvey had an intellect that ought to have achieved great things. As it was, everything was transmuted into rancour and all uncharity.

4. *The 'living Nashe.'* I will not deny that in relation to Thomas Nashe this outrageous 'free lance' deserved all he got from either Harvey or others. Nor am I unaware of the cleverness of a good many of the irate Scholar's retorts on his antagonist, or of the drollness of many of his adoptions and adaptations of Nashe words and terms and turns and phrases. But two things are to be remembered. First—That Nashe offered an 'olive-branch' of reconciliation and oblivion. This I have already stated in 'Memorial-Introduction — Biographical' (vol. i., pp. xlix). I recall it now because his substantive relentlessness and inexorable wounded vanity are hereby made to stand out characterisingly. Second—That from first to last he has no idea of the surpassing intellectual force of Nashe; of the child's play that it was to him to beat a score of Harveys; of the epoch-marking advent of a new writer of English prose. As with Greene and Marlowe, Nashe was nothing to Gabriel Harvey, D.C.L., but an impudent varlet with a blackguard tongue. His "Trimming of Thomas Nashe" is sheer vulgarity and oyster-wife abuse. It is a rewarding study to see with what ability and gusto Nashe takes up Harvey's challenges and caps his best and worst stories of him.

Coming a little closer to Harvey's controversies or 'flytings' with Nashe, it occurs to me as worth while to record here the bulk (at least) of his quotations from "Pierce Pennilesse" in the "Foure Letters," and to note a few minor things therein.



xx MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.

- p. 195. "For . . . Purse," P. P., Shaks. Soc. ed., p. 13.
- p. 196. "Why ist . . . disease?" verse, P. P. 3.
- p. 196. "Divines . . . dwell," verse, P. P. 5.
- p. 196. "England . . . worth," verse, P. P. 6.
- p. 196. "Hei . . . mouent," verse, P. P. 6.
- "Forgive . . . Mirth," verse, P. P. 6—altered from first person to third.
- p. 197. From "Mecænas," l 3, to "worke," l 7, is greatly made up from phrases, P. P. 42.
- p. 200 *ad fin.* "Talketh of a Bachelor's . . . Aristotle," P. P. 43.
- p. 201. "Casting . . . celestial bodies," all prose, P. P. 42.
- p. 201. "Elderton's . . . ballats," P. P. 44.
- "Beard of Th. N. . . . sternely upon him," P. P. 42.
- "Monstrous, monstrous," pp. 45. [Said by Nashe of Harvey's "Lambe of God."]
- p. 202. "But as . . . wast paper," a reference to P. P. 46.
- p. 204. "Termes [*ad fin.*] . . . eares," P. P. 43.
- p. 205. "Supplication . . . Darkeness" [a second reference], P. P. 13.
- p. 206. "Contend with cold . . . Humfrey," P. P. 1, 9, 11.
- "Lick dishes," P. P. 47.
- p. 206. "To ban . . . wretch," verse, P. P. 6.
- p. 206. "Devils distressed orator"—"your [the devil's] single souled orator," P. P. 13.
- p. 207. "Forgive . . . birth," verse, altered from first to third person, P. P. 6.
- p. 207. "O friends . . . downe," verse, P. P. 6.
- "Pol . . . Amici," P. P. 6.
- p. 209. "Ah . . . so," verse, P. P. 6.
- p. 198. "Fortuna favet fatu," quoted in margin, P. P. 6.
- p. 209. "Meritis . . . causam," in margin of P. P. 7.
- p. 214. "Aquafortis," a second reference to P. P. 43.
- p. 216. "Eares . . . gunpowder," third reference to P. P. 43.
- p. 217. "Sanabill . . . trice," P. P. 46.
- p. 194. "To . . . Darknesse," P. P. 13.
- p. 195. "*Fauste*," etc. He does not mean that Nash quoted this, but that the Latin quotations or sentences that cover the margins of his opening pages are as trite as this phrase.
- p. 195. "That the worlde . . . miserable," P. P. 6.

*MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL. xx*

Glancing back on these, be it noted that Nashe (P. P., p. 43, margin) speaks of "Marti authoris Io Pæan," and in his text manifestly gives the authorship to Gabriel Harvey. He also says that one of his brothers fathered a book written by Gabriel Harvey (p. 44). It is also noteworthy that Harvey never directly denies the truth of Nashe's accusation (pp. 200-1). Judging from his character, one must believe that he would have denied the Bachelor's hood story if he could, just as he would have denied, had it been possible, the absurd predictions so mercilessly laughed at. It seems also all but certain that Gabriel Harvey had to do with the "Mar-Prelate" tractates (of which more in Nashe *in loco*).

Further—without giving an exhaustive list, the following words occur first in Nashe, and are quoted from him by Harvey :—

Absonisme, Nashe	ii. 263	Gibraltar, Nashe	ii. 240
Balductums,	" 263	(but in Harvey, ii.	
Calimunco,	" 283	246, Gibraltar).	
Catilaries,	" 191	Gilgilis Hoberdehoy,	" 238
Carminicall,	" 180	Inckhornisme,	" 265
Dromidate,	" 218	Pistlepragmos,	" 231
Gabriel Howleglass,	" 237	Turlery ginkes,	" 293
Gamaliel Hobgoblin,	" 224	Why thou errant, &c.	"
Gimpanado,	" 184		238-9
Gregory Haberdine,	" 241	(Harvey ii. 230).	

Nashe's Harvey-like readiness in producing personal gossip against his adversary perhaps hit keenest of all in his inuendoes on Mercy Harvey. As it was deemed expedient to reproduce her Story from Harvey's "Letter-Book" (in the present volume), these

Notes may find a place at this point. The opening of the Story gives a summary of what is told afterwards in detail. It seems proper to call attention to this, as Mr. Scott has not done so. There are certain chronological contradictions: *e.g.*, pp. 76 and 79, Weddensday—p. 76 says “next Weddensday” to “three or four daies after” (which after Tuesday must have been Friday or Saturday), but p. 79 says, “almost a sennight after”—a clear discrepancy in the tale. There is also a want in “followith” (p. 86). Then there is another discrepancy pp. 87 and 89. In p. 87 she appoints the next day to Christmas (*i.e.* Sunday, the day after Christmas); she came, and went away; and, p. 89, agrees to meet him on Sunday, the next day to Christmas! Then she on the Thursday (p. 90; also p. 93, ll. 7-9) before New Year’s Day, excuses herself that she had gone to her friends. All this is put right if we suppose Christmas on p. 89 to be a slip for New Year’s Day. There is a second want at p. 84, “on this manner,” the letter not being given. A third is on page 93, “as followith,” but nothing follows. Is the explanation this—that after copying out the young lord’s first letter (p. 82) Harvey probably thought it shorter and simpler to insert the originals in the places? Finally here—Mr. Scott (as before) at page 76 prints “thirde” “seconde letter.” The difficulty lies in the word ‘thirde,’ not in ‘seconde’; and as it is in “ ” it may be a misreading and misprint for or variant of ‘thirle,’ which is now in Devonshire = meagre, thin or lean. Not improbably the noble lord, trusting to his gifts

more than to his words, did not trouble himself with more than a brief note. That it was the Lords 'seconde' letter appears by page 84, ¶ 4.

Mercy Harvey is supposed to be vindicated by her Brother's narrative; but it lies on the surface that she was rather afraid than unwilling. She hesitates and tampers, says no when she meant yes, and in her heart of hearts was fallen. The Story is as a shaft of light opened on the manners and conduct of a (so-called) married 'nobleman,' and suggests a good deal.

5. *The Countess of Pembroke.* Our Glossarial-Index references under 'Gentlewoman' and under 'Pembroke' will satisfy the critical reader that the two were one—that is, that Harvey wished to convey that idea. Notwithstanding his fulsome, nauseous flatteries (*e.g.*, vol. i., 276-84, etc., etc.), no such 'Vindication' of him by "Sidney's sister, Pembroke's mother," ever appeared. I doubt exceedingly if the "fair lady" was not fooling the Pedant to the top of his bent, or possibly his 'wish' was 'father to the thought.' The student-reader will compare the double set of references (as above). Specifically the identification is verified by the odd use of the word 'tinsel' in vol. i., pp. 279-80, and ii. 321. It is conceivable that in her offence with Nashe for his part in the alleged surreptitious publication of the 'Arcadia' the Countess of Pembroke might feel disposed to 'punish' him. If so, her second-thoughts were wiser, seeing that she was no match for the terrible tongue and pen of Thomas Nashe. *En passant*, Harvey's "Onely One 'excepted'"

xxiv *MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.*

(ii. 266) pointed to Elizabeth, who even in her proud old age would allow herself to be placed second to none. The *potentiality*, the momentum of the 'great Queen' comes out in a thousand ways in contemporary literature; but in hardly anything more strikingly than in the semi-scared note when laudation of any sort of any other seems to touch her supremacy. So abject a nature as Harvey's is no great instance, but there are greatest instances—as witness Spenser, Shakespeare, "rare Ben."

I know not that it is warrantable to occupy more space or words in criticism of Dr. Gabriel Harvey. His relations to Sidney and Spenser give one inevitable relentings in our as inevitable low thoughts of him; and when we turn over his most cantankerous and quibbling pages we come upon "wise saws and modern instances" and salt of wit, that, while they do not countervail our low thoughts of the man, compel us to acknowledge that, if a fool, he was a '*learned* fool,' and if his positive achievement through a long life (in literature) weighed against a handful of earth which has raised a wildflower or blade of grass, is outweighed by it, we nevertheless have a hankering sense of (abortive) capacity and misdirected force. Thus doubly regarded, I hope most of my readers will deem it is no mere supererogation to have 'painfully' collected Gabriel Harvey's 'Works.' It had been easy to have increased these from MSS. and Marginalia in public and private libraries, but I take it, the *raison d'être* for any collection of such writings lies mainly in the necessity of the student of our

literature possessing Harvey's tractates in order to understand those of Greene, Nashe, and other contemporaries ; whilst his vituperative vocabulary is of singular interest in the history of our language, albeit his alleged scholarship is not invariably confirmed by some of his odd coinages. I therefore content myself with printing—in conclusion—for *the first time*, a letter of Harvey's which (with many treasures) I personally transcribed when, by permission of the Marquis of Salisbury, I spent "sunny days" among the Manuscripts of Hatfield.

The Letter thus runs :—

DR. GABRIEL HARVEY TO SIR R. CECIL.

SIR,—May it please you amongst so many honorable welcoms at your returne after your honorable Embassage in France, performed like your other actions with encrease of your worthy reputation : to accept the duty of an affectionate mind, and to voutsafe the reading of a few, officious lines, written rather with my hart, then with my hand. I presume your Honour cannot be ignorant, how special and extraordinarie favour it pleased aswell my Lord your most worthy father, as my Lady your excellent moother to voutsafe me many yeares since : and I must neuer forget the report of sum honest frends, how much I was beholding unto yourself, for sum good words, most fauorably uttered of me, whiles you were in the Lowe Countrie : at the time of that noble Embassage, and weightie Treatie with the Prince of Parma. In which respects, together with an infallible assurance of your sound judgment and vertuous disposition, effectually approved to the world : I am the bolder at this instant to undertake a humble petition to your Honour, in a suite wherein I most earnestly and importunely sollicitated your right honorable parents sum twelve yeares since : as percase yourself may remember. Not without pregnant hope of speeding, either by the ordinarie course of election, or by their extraordinarie favour, had not her Majesties

H. III.

d

xxvi *MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.*

mandate, overruled the case. Doctor Preston, the Master of that hall, is either now dead or at the point of death, past hope of recouerie: as I am credibly certified. I should think myself at the last sumway happy, and would render myself as thankfull as any man of my possibilitie, if by the only meanes of my good Lord Treasurer, and your good Honour, I might procure the gracious fauour that preferred Mr. Preston, to that Mastership: first by the Letter of your predecessor Mr. Secretary Walsingham, for the stay of the election, till her Maiesties pleasure were better knowne; and then by Her Highnes mandate for the election of Mr. Preston. Which course made him master of that Colledg, where otherwise he could noway have requested, or purchased one voice: and I then might have gotten it by pluralitie of voices; whereof I supposed myself sure. Now having sum yeares discontinued my place there, and but two of the cumpanie leaft, that were fellowes then, and I using no plausible, or pleasing meanes after the fashion of the world; I know not certainly, how farr I might preuaile with them: and have the more cause to dowbt in respect of sum new Doctore, soiorning there since. Howbeit much mie punies in senioritie and such as neuer were fellowes of the Colledg, whereas I was fellow there sum fiftene yeares, after I had bene eight yeares fellow in Pembroke Hall. All this time the best I can say for myself, is, that I have continually dun my endeouour to loose no time: but in a manner without all interruption haue spent so great part of mine age, either in reading the best Autors extant, aswell in Lawe, as in other emploiable faculties; or in writing sum Discourses, either of private use, or of publique importance. For in all mie studdies, and exercises, especially since I was Doctor, I had euer an earnest and curious care of sownd knowledg, and esteemed no reading, or writing without matter of effectual use in esse: as I hope should soone appeare, if I were settled in a place of competent maintenance, or had but a foundation to build upon according to incident occasions. Sum men would haue used more plausible meanes of Insinuation to my good Lord Treasurer, that haue not written halfe so much in honour of his weightie and rare vertues, and in memorie of his tru-honor-

*MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.* xxvii

able name : as at any occasion, I am redly to impart to your Honour, whensoever your leisure will permit the perusal of such exercises. But I protest, I sought not mine owne commoditie, or preferment, but his honour and fame ; as I also did in sundrie royall Cantos, (nigh as much in quantitie, as Ariosto) in celebration of her Maiesties most prosperous, and in truth glorious gouernement ; sum of them deuised many yeares past at the particular instances of the excellent knight, and mie inestimable deare friend, Sir Philip Sidney ; sum since the renowned victorie in the famous yeare, 88. Which neuertheless I intended not to publish in y<sup>e</sup> lifetime of Her Maiestie, had not sum late provoking occasions enforced an alteration of my purpose : but in case of mortalitie, or a thousand casualties in forrin traual, I meant, to committ them to the fidelitie of sum faithfull and iudicious friend. Now if my good L. Treasurer or your good H. shall in your sharp and sound iudgment, not disallow of them ; it importeth me in sum considerations, to bestow a little time in the transcribing and reforming of them ; and to publish them, together with manie other Traicts and Discourses, sum in Latin, sum in English, sum in verse according to the occasion, but much more in prose ; sum in Humanitie, Historie, Pollicy, Lawe, and the sowle of the whole boddie of Law, Reason, sum in the Mathematiques, in Cosmographie, in the Art of Nauigation, in the Art of warr, in the tru Chymique without imposture (which I learned of your most learned predecessour, Sir Thomas Smith, not to contemne) and other effectual practicable knowlage, in part hetherto unreuealed, in part unskilfully handeled for the matter, or obscurely for the forme : with more speculatiue conceit, then industrious practis, or method, the two discouering eich (*sic*) of this age. I speak it not anyway to boste, (that loath the follie of any such vanity) but to certifie y<sup>e</sup> truth. For I can in one year publish more, then anie Englishman hath hetherto dun : I hope with the allowance of the sharpest and deepest Judgments in England : whose censure I am not only willing, but desirous to underlie, as one that would be lothe to divulge anything without hope of life, and continuance in it. But thereof more at fitter opportunitie. Now concerning my present



xxviii *MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.*

petition, if I might with effect beseech your Honour to cause a stay of that election, till fuller advertisement of Her Maiestie's pleasure, and then to procure Her Highnes mandate in my behalfe: surely I should hold myself the most bownden unto your H. of any schollar in England, euen everlastingly, and will alwaies be fownd as sincerely gratefull and dutifull to my good L. Treasurer, and yourself, as anie man possibly may in my case. And in the meantime most humbly and affectionately remaine at your seruice; if it may like your Honour, to desire y<sup>e</sup> fauor to commande the same in any sort. I beseech God to continu the accomplishment of his rare and singular blessings upon you: and so crauing pardon for this tediousness, I affectionatly recommend you to the continual encrease of his excellent and diuine graces. From Walden: this 8. of May.

“Your Honours right-dutiful at commandment,

“Gabriel haruey.

*Add.* “To the Right honorable Sir Robert Cecill, principal Secretary to Her most excellent Maiestie: and late Lorde Embassadour in France, newly returned thence.”

*End.* “1598. 8<sup>o</sup> Mail. Dr. Harvey to my Mr. The Mr. of Trinitie Hall dangerouslie sycke. Desires the eleccōn may be stayd for him.”

I conclude these additions to our ‘Memorial-Introduction—Biographical’ (vol. i.) with two *items* worthy of preservation—viz., a curious published allusion to the Nashe-Harvey quarrel, and a contemporary and hitherto unpublished MS. on the “Trimming of Thomas Nashe.” These follow.

(a) From “Letter of England to her Three Daughters” in “Polimanteia, or the meanes lawfull and unlawfull to iudge of the Fall of a Commonwealth, 1595” (reproduced in our *Occasional Issues*). This has already been given in our Nashe (vol. i., pp. xvii-xviii), but is needed here as well, thus:—

*MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.* xxix

“*Cambridge*, make thy two childrē friēds : thou hast been vnkinde vnto the one [Nashe] to weane him before his time ; and too fonde vpon the other to keepe him so long without preferment : the one is ancient, and of much reading [Harvey], the other is young but full of wit ; tell thē both thou bred thē, and brought thē vp : bid the ancient forbear to offer wrong ; tell the younger he shall suffer none : bid him that is free by law, think it a shame to be entangled in small matters : but tell the other, he must leaue to meditate reuenge for his aduersarie (and let that suffice for al reuenge) (to learnings iniurie) liues vnregarded.”

(b) From “Sloane MSS., Plut. xcvi. E.” :—

THE TRIMING OF TOM NASHE.

*Harke, harke my Masters, and give eare, give eare, etc.*

Harke, hark my maysters and be still, be still and giue good eare  
And I will singe as merrye a jeast as you have hearde this  
year ;  
For mirth methinkes this merrye ryme shold not come out  
of season,  
If any then fynde any faulte, he lackes both wit and reason ;  
Yet sing I not of lo[rd] nor kn[ight] nor Sq[uire] of low  
degree,  
But of a merrye Greeke who dwelt far hence 'ith North  
Countrye ;  
Far hence 'ith North Countrye he dwelt ; his name I have  
forgot,  
But since he was foole neere a kin to Monsier Don Quixot,  
And like him too as like might bee, in bodye, mynde and  
face,  
And for his doughtye deedes in fight, not bating him an ace ;  
And he as many authors read as ere Don Quixot had,  
And some of them colde say by harte, to make the hearers  
glad.  
The valyand deeds o'th kn[ight] of th' Sun and Rosicleer  
soe tall,  
And Palmarinde of Engl[and] too. and Amadis of Gaul ;

xxx *MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.*

Bevis of Hampton he had read, and Guy of Warwick stoute,  
Nuon of Burdeux, though so long, yet he had read him out :  
The hundred tales, and scoggings jeasts, and Arthur of th  
round Table,  
The twelve wyse men of Gotam too, and Ballats innumer-  
able :  
But to proceed, and not to make the matter long or  
garrishe,  
He was the onlye onely youth that was in al our parishe ;  
This gallant foole livde twenty yeares under his Mother's  
wing,  
And for to see some countrys strange, he thought to have  
a flinge.  
He saddled then his good gray mare, his mare as gray as  
glasse,  
The w<sup>ch</sup> cold carrye sakes to'th mil, far better then an ASSE ;  
He tooke his leave of all his frends but cheiflye of his  
mother,  
Who sware of all the Barnes she had, she had not sike  
an other.  
Hee mounted then upon his mare, and shorte tale for to tell,  
His father's Bootes, and one old spur, did serve him  
passing well ;  
His mother's Girdle for a scarfe, did make him fine and  
gay ;  
W<sup>th</sup> rustye morglay by his syde foole brave he went away.  
He had not ridden halfe a myle, good lucke may him  
betyde,  
But he askte the way to Lond[on] towne, for thether wold  
he ryde ;  
Yet was it neuer his good luck, his good luck to come there ;  
Disastrous fortune kept him backe, as you shall after heare.  
But when he had ridden twenty myles, twenty at the most ;  
He at an old house did dismount, and then began to boaste ;  
If England bee as big each way as I have come, he sayde,  
Then of the Spanyard, Turke, nor Pope, we need not be  
afrayde ;  
But then to his Ostis spake he, let me haue for my Money  
A dainty dish, w<sup>ch</sup> likes me well, men call Codlinge and  
honey.

*MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.* xxxi

In truth Sr, (q<sup>th</sup> she) I have neither Cake, pye, nor Custarde,  
But I have a dishe, a daintye dish, men call stewd pr[unes]  
and musterd.

But when his pennye he had spent, and was about to paye,  
Shee spyde by chance, by chance she spyde some riding on  
the way;

To whom w<sup>th</sup> cap in hand he said, praye whether are you  
bound?

We ryde fayre Sr, (q<sup>th</sup> one of them) to Ebors ancient  
towne;

And thether wold I ryde (q<sup>th</sup> he) if you ryde not to faste.  
But to be breife, at Ebors towne they alighted at the last;  
Hee to an Oastler gave his mare, and bad him take some  
paynes

To set hir up, to give hir hay and halfe a pecke of Graynes,  
The whilst he went about the towne, some mervailles for to  
spye:

But first of all he wondred that the houses were soe hye;  
But then he saw the strangest sight y<sup>t</sup> ere he saw before,  
A Monky mowing at his clog, tyde at my lo[rd] Major's  
doore:

Hee blest himselfe, and then did aske, what Country man  
he was?

A Monkye Sr! A Monke (q<sup>th</sup> he) why then he can sing  
Masse!

Nay Sr, hee's neyther French, nor Du[tch] nor Scot, nor  
Papiste.

Not eyther? I am sure, I'm sure he is some slye outlandish  
Atheist.

But when he had gapèd at each shop, and gazèd at each signe,  
Hee at the Tavernè needes wold drinke, his pennye pot of  
wyne.

When he had drunke the wyne so redd, he was so animated,  
That he wold to the Barbers goe to be matriculated;

But when unto the shop he came, the Barbar neat and trim,  
Did bid him welcome hartyle, and th[us] he spake to him.

Of what newe Cut wil you be Cut, the French Cut or y<sup>e</sup>  
Dutch?

For of newe Cuts I have such store, fewe in this towne have  
such:

xxxii *MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.*

Will you be Cut the swallow taylor, the Spade or Piccadavante?  
For all thes Cuts to pleasure you upon my fingers haunte.  
Of other Cuts I have in store if you mislike of thos,  
The lovelye Cut unto yo<sup>r</sup> frends, or Cruel to yo<sup>r</sup> foes ;  
So much of Cuts the Barber talkt, my youth did like him  
worse,  
For why he fearde one of thos Cuts was, he wold Cut his  
purse.  
I pray you Clippe my hayre (q<sup>th</sup> he) none of yo<sup>r</sup> Cuts I crave.  
It shal be done the Barber said, yo<sup>r</sup> bearde Ile also shave.  
He knew not what that shaveing meant yet durst he nothing  
say,  
But prayde him for to make some haste, for he had haste  
away.  
Hee set him downe then in a chayre upon a cushen warme ;  
Hee put a cloath about his necke ; al this was yet no  
harme.  
Hee polde his heade, and washte his face, w<sup>th</sup> Bals that  
sweet did smel,  
He rubde and scrubd, he snipt and snapt ; al this did like  
him well.  
W<sup>ch</sup> being done, the Barber then proceeds to shave his face,  
And w<sup>th</sup> a razor sharpe and keene, began to scrape apace.  
Hee being fearde, the Barber said, Ile warrant ye for a  
pin ;  
But as he talkt he whitled stil just underneath his chin,  
W<sup>ch</sup> terrifyed him so to<sup>th</sup> harte that (this I pray you note),  
Before he fearèd but his Purse, but now he feard his  
Throate.  
Plucke up yo<sup>r</sup> harte, the Barber said, let nothing heere  
afright yee ;  
And wyfe bring hether quicklye, quick, a little *aqua vita*.  
And you S<sup>r</sup> Boy, come hither now and on your Citron playe,  
Some merrye hunts up or Scotch jig, to drive his feare  
away :  
But yet before the water came my youth was in a swounde,  
Nor Magicke then cold banish feares, for he sanke to the  
ground.  
The Barber swore, the wyfe cryde out, the neighbo<sup>r</sup> in  
came runing,

MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL. xxxiii

And euerye one to save the man did shew their skil and  
cuning :  
Some helde burnt feathers to his nose, caste wat[er] in his  
face,  
Pourde *agua vitæ* in his mouth, and some did pray apace.  
But yet when all was done, and too their hope was almost  
past,  
Until by giving him some ayre his lyfe returnde at last.  
But oh the shop was soe perfumde, each one did stop his  
nose ;  
For he for feare, for feare, alas, alas had shit his hose,  
Some laught, some smilde, and some cryde fye, but all  
made hast away,  
And he w<sup>th</sup> shame and greefe poore man did for his triming  
pay ;  
And went from thence unto the place from whence he came  
before,  
And vowde to God, to God he vowde, neuer to trauel more.  
So home unto his mother came and there you need not  
doubt  
But of all his trauels made a rime but of his Cutting out.  
Thus have I done the best to please, the best that I was able,  
W<sup>ch</sup> if it please, then bid me Drinke, and so be at your  
Table. Finis.

This burlesque on satire, or satirical burlesque,  
was evidently meant to represent 'Tom Nashe'  
ludicrously, albeit save the title the anonymous  
writer of it leaves Harvey unnoticed. Whether  
he was for him or no, Thomas Dekker's verdict  
remains :—

"And thou, into whose soule (if euer there were a  
*Pithagorean Metempsychosis*) the raptures of that fierie and  
inconfineable *Italian* spirit were bounteously and boundlesly  
infused, thou sometimes Secretary to *Pierce Pennylesse*,  
and Master of his requests, ingenious, ingenuous, fluent,  
facetious, *T. Nash* : from whose abundant pen, hony  
flow'd to thy friends, and mortall Aconite to thy enemies :

xxxiv *MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—CRITICAL.*

thou that madest the Doctor a flat Dunce, and beat'st him at two tall sundry Weapons, Poetrie, and Oratorie : Sharpest Satyre, Luculent Poet, Elegant Orator, get leave for thy Ghost to come from her abiding, and to dwell with me a while, till she hath carows'd to me in her owne wōted ful measures of wit, that my plump braynes may swell, and burst into bitter Inuectiues against the Lieftenant of Limbo, if hee casheere *Pierce Pennylesse* with dead pay" (vol. ii., p. 103).

On the first folio (reversed) of the MS. whence the preceding poem is fetched, is this note : " Leave y<sup>s</sup> at Mr. Kirkes at y<sup>e</sup> signe of y<sup>e</sup> wild man upon y<sup>e</sup> market place ; in Breda for Mr. Roger Carter : frō his sister, Ja. Hearne." The MS. would thus appear to have been formerly in the possession of the antiquary Hearne ; but he gives no indication of the Scribe. It is a curious miscellany of Verse and Prose.

I may not close this second half of my Memorial-Introduction and the last volume of Harvey's ' Works,' without heart-felt acknowledgment of able, willing and continuous help rendered by Dr. Brinsley Nicholson, of London. As in nearly all my undertakings, this well-informed and accurate fellow-worker, has in the most spontaneous and self-denying way hastened to render me all possible aid.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART.



VII.

TRIMMING OF THOMAS NASHE,  
GENTLEMAN . . . .

1597.



H. III.

1



**NOTE.**

For the 'Trimming of Thomas Nashe' I am again indebted to the Huth Library—a second exemplar is in the British Museum. Our reproduction of Nashe's caricature-portrait is faithful to the original, and must not be judged of by Mr. J. P. Collier's very poor one, any more than our texts of either Harvey or Nashe, by his.—G.

THE  
TRIMMING

*of Thomas Nashe, Gentleman,*  
by the high-titled patron *Don*  
*Richardo de Medico campo*, Barber  
Chirurgion to Trinitie Col-  
ledge in Cambridge.

*Faber quas fecit compedes ipse gestat.*



LONDON,  
*Printed for Philip Scarlet.*

1597.



To the Learned.

*Eme, perlege, nec te precii pavitebit.*

*To the simple.*

Buy mee, read me through, and  
thou wilt not repente thee of  
thy cost.





*To the Gentle Reader.*

**R**oface gentle Gētlemen, I am forry I haue no better Cates to prefēt you with : but pardon I pray you, for this which I haue heere prouided, was bred in Lent, and Lent (you know) is faid of *leane*, becaufe it macerates & makes leane the bodye : if therefore this difh bee leane and nothing anfwearable to your expectation, let it fuffice twas bred in Lent : neither had it anye time wherein it might gather anye thinge vnto it ſelfe to make it more fat and delightfull. His Epiftle I expected any time theſe three yeares, but this mine aunſwer *ſine fuco loquar*, (though it be not / worthy to bee called the worke of one well ſpent houre) I haue wrought forth out of the ſtolne houres of three weekes : for although occaſion hath been offered euer ſince the Epiftle hath been extant, to anſwere it: yet held in ſuſpence conſidering the man and matter, whether I ſhould take it vpon mee or no : at laſt concluding him eaſily anſwerable, I haue vndergone it : therefore howſoeuer you ſee it crept abroad

Gentles, receiue it well in worth : Your fauours happily might adde strength vnto it, and stirre vp the faint creeping steps to a more liuely pace : it by hard hap being denied of the progresse, keeping at home hath growne somewhat greater. To tell you what the man is, and the reason of this book, were but triuiall and superfluous, only this, you may call it *The trimming of Thomas Nasbe*, wherein hee is described. In trimming of which description, though I haue founde out and fetcht from the mint some few new wordes to coulor him, / grant me pardon, I thinke them fitte for him who is so limmed and coullored with all new found villanie : for if they bee etimologisde, they no whit disagree from his properties. Slender labour hath suffised to weaue this thinne superficiall vaile to couer his crimson Epistle, and shaddow it foorth vnto the world. For as a garment of too bright a color is too euil an obiect for the eyes (as is the Sun), & is nothing gazed after, no not of those who neuer saw it before : yet newe things are desired, because twould proue pernicious to their eyes, but once oreclouded and couered with a lawne vesture, through that it shines & becommeth a lesse hurting obiect, and draws the peoples sight after it : so his Epistle in it[s] owne colour beeing too resplendent and hurtfull to the readers, is laid apart & is nothing in request, for that twould proue as a burn-

ing glasse vnto their eyes, but vested with this Caule & rare-wrought garmēt, it loseth part of it[s] hurting vigour, & therefore is cald to be seene againe.

Loathed / tediousnes I also eschewed as no lesse hurtfull than too bright an obiect : the Booke which he dedicateth to me, is so tedious, that had I read it through, it so loathsome would haue wrought more on mee both vpward & downward, then 3. drams of pilles : his Epistle is not behinde hand : to that I might say as said *Diogenes* to the men of *Minda*, (whose gates were greater in analogicall proportion then their Citie :) O yee men of *Minda*, looke to your Cittie, that it flyes not out at your gates. So his booke might well for the largeness of the Epistle haue flowne out at it, and surely I thinke had his book any wings, that is, any quaint deuise flying abroad to please withall, it would neuer haue staid till this time : therefore I thinke it prouidently done of him (though out of doubt the foole had no such drift) to make the gates so bigge, that when we haue passed through the gates, supposing all the Cittie to be sutable to the statelines of them : but after we are entred, finding / our selues meerey guld, and that all the Cittie is not worth the gates, wee may the more readily finde the way out of the Cittie againe, the gates beeing so great : and this

remedye I founde once when I tooke my iourney into his Cittie. But to returne, If this bee not so well set foorth as you could wish it were, blame mee not: for as the Moon being naked & bare, is said once to haue gone to her mother, and asked of her a coat to cloath her: but she answered, there could bee no coate made fit for her, for her instabilitie, sometime she being in the ful, and sometime in the wane: so hee being a man of so great reuolution, I could not fit him, for if I had vndertaken to speak of one of his properties, another came into my mind, & another followed that, which bred confusion, making it too little for him: therefore were it not too little, it might be twold be fit, but howsoever, pardon (Gentlemen) my boldnes in presenting to your fauorable views this litle & cōfused coate.

Yours in all curtesie, *Richard Lichfield.* |



*The trimming of Thomas Nashe.*



IR, heere is a gentleman at the doore would speake with you. Let him come in. *M. Nashe!* welcome. What, you would be trimd? & I cannot denie you that fauour. Come, sit downe, Ile trim you my selfe. How now? what makes you sit downe so tenderly? you crintch in your buttocks like old father *Pater patriæ*, he that was father to a whole countrey of bastards. Dispatch, ft, boy, set the water to the fire: but firra, hearke in your eare, first goe prouide me my breakfast, that I goe not fasting about him; then goe to the Apothecarie, and fetch mee some reprefiue *Antidotum* to put into the bafon, to keep downe the venemous vapors that arise from his infectious excrements: for (I tell you) I like not his countenance, I am afraid he labours of the venereall murre.



Muse not (gentle *Thomas*) that I come so roughly vpon you with Sit downe, without anie Dedicatorie Epistle, which (I know) you expected; for that your Epistle (in some wise) brought forth this small Worke: which purposely I omitted, scorning Patronage against you. For if (by an Epistle) I had made some Lord or Knight my Patron, it would haue menaged and giuen courage to you, thus (not sufficient of my selfe) I should get some Protector to stand out with you. As in a Cocke fight, if the Cocke-master takes off his Cocke when they are buckled together, it encourageth the other Cocke (deeming / his aduerfarie to flye to his Master for refuge): so that hee crowes forth the triumph before the victorie. Therefore forfooth, if for orders sake (that of custome might be made a necessarie law) you would haue an Epistle, I thought it best, respecting the subiect matter, as neere as possibly I could to patterne it with the like Patron. Then not knowing where to heare  
 of some miscreant, polluted with all vices  
<sup>O eloquence.</sup> both of bodie & minde: and viewing ouer all the imprest images of men in the memoriall cell of my braine, at last I espied your selfe more liuely ingrauen than the rest, and as it were offering your selfe to this purpose. Then presently I made choice of you, that like an asse you might beare your burden, & patronize your owne scourge,

as dooth the filly hedge-sparrow, that so long  
 fostereth vp the cuckow in her neast, till at length  
 she bee deuoured of her: or the Viper, that is  
 destroyed of her owne whelpes. All *England* for a  
 Patron. But to this sodaine ioy, (for sodaine ioy  
 soone ends) this crosse happened; That knowing  
 it to bee my duetie to gratulate my  
 Patrone with the first hereof, but not <sup>Item for you.</sup>  
 knowing where to finde you, for that you (the  
 Worlds Citizen) are heere and there, you may  
 dine in this place, & goe supperlesse to bed, if you  
 know where to haue your bed: you maye  
 bee in one prison to-day and in another <sup>Wel put in.</sup>  
 to-morrow: so that you haue a place but as a  
 fleeting incorporeall substaunce, circumscribed with  
 no limits, that of your owne you haue not so much  
 as one of *Diogenes* his poore cottages. You haue  
 indeed a *terminus a quo* (as we Logicians speake)  
 but no *terminus ad quem*. Now sir, for the  
 vncertaintie of your mansion house, you hauing  
 all the world to keepe Court in, and  
 being so haunted with an earthquake, <sup>How hardly  
I leaue this  
commonplace.</sup>  
 that in what house soeuer you are one  
 daye, you are shaken out the next, my little Booke  
 might kill three or four porters, that / must run vp  
 and downe *London* to seeke you, and at the last  
 might dye it selfe for want of succour before it  
 comes to your hands. Yet it might bee, that in

your request you are insatiable, you will take no excuse, your will is your reason, nay may not be admitted. Well, it shall be yours: for your Epistles sake, haue at you with an Epistle.





To | the polypragmaticall, parasitupocriticall, and  
pantophainoudendeconticall Puppie Thomas Nashe,  
Richard Leichfeld wisheth the continuance of that  
he hath: that is, that he want not the want of  
health, wealth, and libertie.

*Nas hum. Mitto tibi Nashum prora N. puppi humque carentem.*

**G**OD faue you (right glossomachicall  
Thomas). The vertuous riches, where-  
with (as broad spread Fame reporteth)  
you are indued, though *fama malum*,  
(as faith the poet) which I confirme: for that  
shee is *tam fidi prauique tenax, quam nuncia  
veri*, as well faith Master *William Lilly* in his  
*Adiectiua verbalia in ax.* I say the report of  
your rich vertues so bewitched me toward you,  
that I cannot but send my poore Book to be  
vertuously succoured of you, that when both  
yours & my frends shall see it, they may (for  
your sake) vertuously accept of it. But, it may  
be, you denie the Epistle, the Booke is of you,  
the Epistle must be to some other. I answer,  
you are desirous of an Epistle. Did not *Cesar*

write those things himself which himselfe did? and did not *Lucius* that golden Assē speak of himself which was the Assē? & will not you (though an / Assē, yet neither golden nor siluer) patronize that which others tooke paines to write of you? *Cæsar* and *Lucius* for that shall liue for euer : and so shall you, as long as euer you liue. Go too I say, he is an ill horse that will not carrie his owne prouender. But chiefly I am to tell you of one thing, which I chuse to tell you of in my Epistle, both because of Epistles some be denuntiatorie, as also considering that wise saying elsewhere of the precise Schoolemaster : If thy friend commit anie enormous offence toward thee, tell him of it in an Epistle. And truly this is a great and enormous offence, at which my choller stands vpright, neither will I put it vp. Therefore in sadnes prouide your Lawier, I haue mine, it will beare as good an action, as if you should haue come into another mans house, and neuer say, Hoe God be here : that is, you wrote a foule Epistle to mee, and neuer told me of it before : you might haue said, By your leaue Sir. I warrant you I write but this small Epistle to you, and I tell you of it as long before as the Epistle is long. But now I remember me, there was no hatred between vs before, and therefore twould be prooued but chauce-medley. Let it euen alone, it cannot be

vndone, for a thing easely done neuer can be vndone: and a man may quickly become a knaue, but hardly an honest man. And thus (maleuolent Tom) I leaue thee. From my chamber in *Camb.* to your “ ” *where can you tell?*

*That is, that would*

Yours in loue *vsque ad aras* follow thee euen

*Rich: Lichfield.* to the gallowes.

You / see howe louingly I deale with you in my Epistle and tell of your vertues, which (God forgiue me for it) is as arrant a lye as euer was told: but to leaue these parergastical speeches and to come to your trimming, because I will deale roundly with you, I wil cut you with the round cut, in which I include two cuts: First the margent cut: secondly the perfect cut: The margent cut is nothing els but a preparation to the perfect cut, wherby I might more perfectly discharge that cut vpon you, for as in a deep standing poole, the brinks thereof, which are not vnfitly called the margents, being pared away, we may the better see thereinto: so the margents which fitly we may terme the brinkes of your stinking standing poole (for it infects the eare as doth the stinking poole the smell) being cut away, I may the better finish this perfect cut and rid my selfe of you. To the margent cut. When

write those things himself which himselfe did? and did not *Lucius* that golden Assē speak of himself which was the Assē? & will not you (though an / Assē, yet neither golden nor siluer) patronize that which others tooke paines to write of you? *Cæsar* and *Lucius* for that shall liue for euer: and so shall you, as long as euer you liue. Go too I say, he is an ill horse that will not carrie his owne prouender. But chiefly I am to tell you of one thing, which I chuse to tell you of in my Epistle, both because of Epistles some be denuntiatorie, as also considering that wise saying elsewhere of the precise Schoolemaster: If thy friend commit anie enormous offence toward thee, tell him of it in an Epistle. And truly this is a great and enormous offence, at which my choller stands vpright, neither will I put it vp. Therefore in sadnes prouide your Lawier, I haue mine, it will beare as good an action, as if you should haue come into another mans house, and neuer say, Hoe God be here: that is, you wrote a foule Epistle to mee, and neuer told me of it before: you might haue said, By your leaue Sir. I warrant you I write but this small Epistle to you, and I tell you of it as long before as the Epistle is long. But now I remember me, there was no hatred between vs before, and therefore twould be prooued but chance-medley. Let it euen alone, it cannot be

vndone, for a thing easely done neuer can be vndone: and a man may quickly become a knaue, but hardly an honest man. And thus (maleuolent Tom) I leaue thee. From my chamber in *Camb.* to your “ ” *where cā you tell?*

*That is, that wold*

Yours in loue *vsque ad aras* *folow thee euen*

*Rich: Lichfield.* *to the gallowes.*

You / see howe louingly I deale with you in my Epistle and tell of your vertues, which (God forgiue me for it) is as arrant a lye as euer was told: but to leaue these parergasticall speeches and to come to your trimming, because I will deale roundly with you, I wil cut you with the round cut, in which I include two cuts: First the margent cut: secondly the perfect cut: The margent cut is nothing els but a preparation to the perfect cut, wherby I might more perfectly discharge that cut vpon you, for as in a deep standing poole, the brinks thereof, which are not vnfitly called the margents, being pared away, we may the better see thereinto: so the margents which fitly we may terme the brinkes of your stinking standing poole (for it infects the eare as doth the stinking poole the smell) being cut away, I may the better finish this perfect cut and rid my selfe of you. To the margent cut. When



first your Epistle came into my hands, I boldly opened it, and scaling the margents of it I espied a feely note *quasi conuersant about heads*. I sayd not a word, but turning ouer a leafe or twoo more to see if you continued in those simple animaduersions, and indeed I saw you to bee no changling, for there I espied *barbers knocking of their fingers, & lousie naperie*, as foolish as the other: *semper idem* (thought I) might be your mot, and so you will dye: then I began to marke the note which you adioyned to your notes that they might be noted: there tossing and turning your booke vpside downe, when the west end of it hapned to be upward, me thought your note seemed a D, ah *Dunce, Dolt, Dotterell*, quoth I, well might it be a D. and for my life for the space of twoo houres, could I not leaue rayling of thee all in Ds.

Now to the perfect cut: I cannot but admire you in the / tittle you allow me, seeing wee admire monsters as well as vertuous men, and a foole (as oft I haue heard Scholers dispute in mine office) as a monster: other Barbers like not the title, it pleaseth me, and all the Dukes in *Spaine* cannot shew the like, and I thinke that halfe a yeeres study did not bring it out of thy dunsticall hammer-headed scalpe; but thou dost to disgrace mee, and thinkst thy title decketh a Barber, and that a Barber with thy title is as a rotten

chamber hangd with cloth of arras: but tis not so: alas thy reading affoords thee not to knowe the ancient and valorous power of Barbers.

I could speake howe they flourished amongst the *Abants*, a fierce and warlike people, and by the Barbers perpolike cunning as it were amending nature and shaping their faces to more austeritie, they became more victorious, as *Plutarch* recordeth in the life of *Thefeus*: and young stripplings newly fit for armes, first were brought to *Delphos*, and there offered the first fruites of their haire to *Jupiter*: next him the Barbers were serued and they cut them, and were as *Ioues* Vises to make them fit for warre. They flourished before with the *Arabians*, the *Mysians*, the *Dacians*, the *Dalmatians*, the *Macedonians*, the *Thracians*, the *Seruians*, the *Sarmacians*, the *Valachians* and the *Bulgarians*, as saith *Pollidorus Virgil*: afterward *Alexander* entertained into his campes Barbers as the spurres and whetstones of his armies.

*Dionisus* that blood-thirstie Tyrant that feared no peeres, stode alwaies in feare of Barbers, and rather would haue his hayre burnt off, than happen into the Barbers handes.

Therefore in a Barbers shop (as *Plutarche* reporteth) where some fewe were talking of the Tyrany of / the tyger *Dionysus*. What (said the Barber) are you talking of King *Dionysus*,

whome within these two or three daies I must  
 shauē? When *Dionysus* heard of this, he gate  
 the Barber secretly to be put to death, for feare  
 of after-claps. The Barbers Chaire is the verie  
 Royall-Exchange of newes, Barbers the "head"  
 of all Trades. I could speake of their excellencie,  
 for that a mans face (the principall part  
None but  
 Barbers meddle  
 with the head. of him) is committed onely to Barbers.  
 All trades adorne the life of man, but none  
 (except Barbers) haue the life of man in their  
 power, and to them they hold vp their throates  
 readie.

If they be happie, whom pleasure, profit and  
 honor make happie, then Barbers with great  
 facilitie attaine to happines. For pleasure, if they  
 be abroad, they are foght too of the best Com-  
 panions, Knights and Esquires send for them :  
 if at home and at worke, they are in pleasing  
 conference ; if idle, they passe that time in life-  
 delighting musique. For profite, a Barber hath  
 liuing in all parts of *England* : he hath money  
 brought in as due as rents, of those whom  
 he neuer saw before. For honour, Kings and  
 ruling Monarchs, (to whom all men crouch with  
 cap in hand and knee on ground) onely to Barbers  
 fit barehead, and with bended knees. But for all  
 this, thou sparest not to raile on Barbers (as on  
 all others) : & being full of botches and boyles

thy selfe, spuest forth thy corruption on all others : but I nought respect it, thy raylings rather profite mee. For (as *Antisthenes* was wont to say) a man might as well learne to liue well of his ill-willing & abusive enemies, as of his honest frends ; of these, by following their vertues, of the others by eschuing their actions, by seeing the effects that followed those actions in his enemies : and as *Telephus* (beeing wounded, and destitute of a sauing remedie at home) went euen to his enemies and sworne foes, to get some soue/erraigne medicine, so if of my friendes I could not learne temperance, I might learne of thee, by seeing the effectes of thy cankered conuicious tongue, for by that thou art brought into contempt : thy talking makes thee bee accounted as a purse that cannot bee shutte, and as an house whose doore standes alwayes open ; and as that open purse contayneth no filuer, and in that house is nothing worthie the taking away, so out of thy mouth proceedeth nothing but noysome and ill-fauerd vomittes of railinges : Wherefore draw together the stringes, and locke vp the doore of thy mouth, and before thou speakest such ill corrupted speeches againe, let it be lifted of the hingelles ; rule I say, that little and troublesome Vermin, that smal tongue of thine ; which in some is not the smallest parte of vertue, but in thee the greatest Arte of vice : not

vnlike the Purple fish, which whilest she gouernes her tongue well, it getteth her foode and hunteth after her praye, but when shee neglect[eth] it, it bringeth her destruction, and she is made her selfe a pray vnto the fisher: so that in that small parcell all vertue and vice lyes hidden, as is recorded of *Kias*, whom King *Amasis* commaunding to sende home the best and most profitable meate from the market, hee sent home a tongue: the king demaunding a reason, hee answered that of a tongue came many profitable and good speeches, and this tongue thou hast not: Then the king sent him to buy the woorst and most vnprofitable meate, and he likewise bought a tongue: the king also asking the reason of this, from nothing (sayde he) issueth worse venome then from the tongue, and this tongue thou hast, and this tongue crosse with the barre of reason, lest thou seeme more foolish then those geese in *Cilicia*, which when the[y] flie in the night time by the hill *Taurus*, that / is possesst of Eagles, are sayde to gette stones into their mouthes, by which as by a bridle they raine in their cryinges, and so quietly passe the greedie talentes of the Eagles: but alas why inuect I so against thy tongue? *lingua* or *lingendo*, and you knowe wee vse alwayes to like in, and so thou shouldest keepe in thy poyson: or a *ligando*, which is to binde, and so thou shouldst binde vp and not

disperfe abroad that ranker in thee: thy tongue doth but in dutie vtter that which is committed vnto it, and nature hath fet before it a double bull-woorke of teeth to keepe in the vagrant wordes which straying abroade and Marke this secret allegorie. beeing surprised may bewray the whole cittie: and the vpper bull-woorke sometymes serues for a percullis, which when any rascallie woorde hauing not the watch-woorde, that is, *reason*, shall but enter out of the gates, is presently lette downe, and so it cuttes it of before it woorketh wracke to the whole Castell: therefore I must of necessitie find out another cause of thine infected speech: and now I haue founde it, fie on thee, I smell thee, thou hast a stinkinge breath: but a stinkinge breath (some say) commeth of foule teeth: and if it bee so, wash thy teeth Tom, for if thou wouldest drawe fourth good and cleane wordes out of thy mouth, thou wouldest washe thy teethe, as euerie tapster that goeth to drawe good beare will washe the pottle before he gooeth: but it may bee the filth hath so eaten into thy teeth that washinge cannot gette it away: then doe as that venome-bitinge beast, that Nile-breedde Crocodile, which to purge her teethe of those shiuered reedes that are wreathed betweene, by feedinge in the water, commeth to the shoore, and there gapinge suffereth some friendly

bird without / daunger to creepe into her mouth,  
Trochilus. and with her bill to picke away the  
troubling reedes : so come you but to some shoore,  
and Ile bee that *Trochilus*, Ile picke your teeth and  
make a cleane mouth, or Ile picke out tounge  
and all, but of this stinkinge breath I speake not.  
*Tædet anima* sayth the Comedian, and this I meane  
not meaning as hee meant, for hee meant a stink-  
inge breath, but by *anima* I meane the forme by  
Philosophy. which thou art what thou art, by which  
also thy senses woorke, which giueth vse to all thy  
faculties and from which all thy actions proceede :  
and this *anima* if thou termist a breath, this breath  
stinketh, and from this breath (as little riuers flowe  
from a fountaine) all thy woordes flow foorth and  
the fountaine being corrupted (as you knowe)  
likewise all the lesser riuers needes must bee cor-  
rupted, and this *anima*, this breath or fountayne  
thou must cleanse : but how to cleanse this breath  
it passeth my cunninge to tell : for thoughe (as I  
am a Cirurgeon) I coulde picke your teeth, for the  
other stinkinge breath, yet this I durst not meddle  
with, this hath neede of a metaphisition ; and lette  
it suffice for mee rudely to take vppe the bucklers  
and laie them downe againe, onely to tune the Lute,  
How I bewich  
thee with  
fecunditie. but to leaue to the more cunninge to  
playe thereon : Count it enough for mee  
that am but an adiuncte to a Scholler, that haue

nothinge of myfelfe but what I gleane vppe at the  
 difputation of fome Schollers in myne office : let  
 it bee fufficient for mee (I fay) onely to tell the  
 reafon of this finkinge breath, and to leaue to  
 more founde Philofophers to determine and fet  
 downe the remedie of it : but nowe it may bee  
*teipfum nofcis*, you fmell your owne / breath, and  
 finde it to bee fo intoxicated with poyfon that  
 vnleffe you haue present helpe you are quite vn-  
 done, you perifh vtterly : and knowing me to be  
 a man of fuch excellent partes, yea of farre better  
 partes then *In fpeech bee thefe eight partes*, Ha ha a ragge  
 borrowed from  
 your owne  
 dunghill.  
 are very infant with me to vnbinde the  
 bundell which I gathered at difputations,  
 and giue you fome remedie for this finkinge  
 breath: loe howe vertue in the friend cafteth  
 fourth her beames euer vpon her enemie, I am  
 ouercome, blufhingly I vndertake it, and like a  
 bashfull mayde refufe, yet deigne you that fauour:  
 then marke, firft goe get fome ftrong A medicine for  
 a stinking  
 breath.  
 hempe, and worke it and temper it fo  
 long together till there arife out of it an engine  
 which wee call *Capiftrum*, then carry this *Capiftrum*  
 to fome beame that lyeth acroffe, for none elfe wil  
 ferue, when it muft bee ftraynde, and the one ende  
 of it faften to the beame, and one the other make  
 a noofe of as rounde a figure as you can, for the  
 roundeft figure is the moft retentiu: let the noofe



bee alwayes readie to slide, for mans breath is flipperie, then when euerie thing is fitted, boldly put through thy heade, then worke the *Capistrum* ouer newe agayne, fwinge vppe and downe twice or thrice that it may be well strainde, and so in short time your olde breath will bee gone: dispayre not yet man, *probatum est*, olde *Æson* was deade a while but reuiued agayne and liued many a yeare after: but marke, nowe to the pynche, if *Platoes* transmigration holde, (which some menne holde) that the *anima* and breathes of men that bee deade doe fleete into the bodyes of other menne which shall liue, then I holde that some breath seeing thy younge bodie without an *anima*, and twould bee harde lucke if some breath or other should not be / yet straying about for a body, their being continually so many let loose at Tiburne, I say, some vnbespoken vagrant breath wil goe in and possesse thy body: nowe if this remedie helpe not, surely thou art vnrecurable: if also thy newe breath happen to be as stinking as thy olde, thou wilt neuer haue a sweete breath in this worlde, nor then neither. And thus much of my title.

You knowe or at the least ought to knowe that writers shoulde eshewe lyes as Scorpions, but your lyes that you deuise of one, are the greatest parte of the matter of your Epistle, as *My shoppe in the towne, the teeth that hange out of my Windowe, my*

*painted may-poole*, with many others which fill vp roome in the Epistle in abundant manner, and which are nothing else but meere lyes and fictions to yeeld the matter, whereby I perceiue howe threede-bare thou art waxen, howe barren thy inuention is, and that thy true amplifying vaine is quite dried vppe. Repent, repent, I say, and leaue of thy lying, which without repentance is very haynous (Pag : 6) : that one lye I make of thee in this booke is presently washed away with repentance. An other lye I cannot but tell you of, which you clappe in my teeth in the very beginning of your Epistle, which nothings greueth mee, for that I suppose it to bee committed of ignorance, that is you tell mee that you come vpon mee with but a dicker of Dickes, but you come vppon mee with feunteene or eighteene Dickes, whereby I see thy ignorance in the Greeke tongue ; thou knowest not what a dicker is : a dicker is but ten of anything, for it commeth of the Greeke word δεκα which is by interpretation, Ten (*de ka*).

Thou obiectest that olde *Tooly* and I differed : I con / fesse it, I am a man alone, I scorne such ragged rent-foorth speech, yet thou mayest well praye for the duall number, thou scabbed, scalde, lame, halting adiectiue as thou art ; in all thy guiles, thou neuer hadest that guile as alone to

get thee one crust of breade; no, I knowe not who had a hande with you in this feely Epistle: goe too, hee is not a minister, he hadde but small reason for it: againe, you remember the time when your fellowe *Lusher* and you lay in cole-harbour together, when you had but one payre of breeches betweene you both, but not one penie to bleffe you both, and howe by course hee woore the breeches one day, and went cunny-catching about for victuals, whilest you lay in bedde, and the next day you wore the breeches to goe begge whilest he lay in bed: for all the worlde like two bucketes in one well: nowe suppose, when *Lusher* wore the breeches, that then thou shouldest haue bene carried to pryson, where nowe thou art, verily I thinke thou shouldest haue escaped prison for want of breeches: or suppose that at that time thou shouldest haue bene hanged, I cannot but thinke that the want of a payre of breeches woulde haue bene better to thee then thy neck-verse, for the hange-man would haue his breeches: no fee, no lawe: but put case that with much adoe, by greate extraordinarie fauour some good hang-man had done thee this last benefitte, that thou mightest neuer troble him agayne, and shoulde haue giuen thee thy hanginge francke and free (as indeede happy for thee had it bene if this good hap had hapned, for then thou shouldst not haue liued

thus miserably in this vaine and wicked worlde) I say plainly, put case thou haddest beene hanged, the hangman not sticking with thee for thy breeches, then *Charon* would haue come vpon you / for his ferry-penny : fie out, money and breeches, as ill as a rope and butter, for if one flippe the other holde, with him no *naulum*, no waftage, and then thou haddest beene in worse case then euer thou wert : thus you see how the want of a payre of breeches might haue been the meanes to haue made thee escape prison, death and vtter damnation : and O thrice happy *Lusher* that shouldst haue beene away with the breeches at that happy time : but when thou wert in thy chiefeft pride, if thou hadst but lent out one payre of breeches thou shouldst haue beene thus happy.

Prayse from the praise-worthy, and hee is not prayfed whose prayser deserueth not prayse : therefore in these places of the Epistle where thou prayfest mee, I take my selfe most to bee dispraised, for that thou the praiser art worthie no praise : for howsoeuer thou leade in a fooles paradise, like the fishe cald a muge (*Mucus snotte*) which is sayde to feede herselfe with her own snotte, for thereof shee takes her name, thou feadest thy-selfe with self-conceite, that whatsoeuer commeth from thee is the verie quintessence of true witte, and that all thy ribaldrie that euer thou settst forth, exceeded

in pleasing mirth, that so thou hast imbraced true *Minuera*, whenas (God knowes) thou art as farre deceiued as euer was poore *Ixion*, that imbraced a cloude in steade of *Iuno*, or that guld-god, mōstrous accadian *Pan*, who in steade of that sweete Nimphe *Syrinx* frumpt a bunche of reedes: yet I must confesse thou haste something, thou art as a bundell of strawe that beeing sett on fire consumes it selfe all in smoke, but no warmnesse commeth from it, so thou hast no true fire in thee, all smother, no thing that can warme a man: thou art as many Ciphers without an 1, which they wan / ting are of themselues nothing, and thou hast much apparencie of witte which is as Ciphers, but thou hast not this same 1: Iota is wanting to thy Ciphers, thou hast not one iot nor title of true witte: againe, as some souldiers that were at *Cales*, breaking into a shoppe for pillage, and there seeing many great sackes readie trussed vppe, they with great ioy made hast away with them, and so with light hartes carryed away their heauie burdens, and when they brought them into the streetes, opening them to see their booties, founde in some of them nought but redde cappes, of which afterward they made store of fires, and in the rest nought but earthen pitchers, chaffendishes and pispottes, and such like: so whosoever shall see thee trussed vppe and in thy clothes,

might happily take thee for a wife young man, but when thou shalt be opened, that is, when he shall see but some worke of thine, he shall finde in thee nought but rascallitie and meere delusions: and for this cause thou mayest be cald the very *Choræbus* of our time, of whom the prouerbe was rayfde, more foole then *Choræbus*: who was a feely ideot, but yet had the name of a wife man: for he might be cald *Choræbus quasi chori Phos*, the light of euery company into which hee came, so thou hast onely the name of a wife man and that is *Nashe*. O wife name, I praye thee let mee christen you a newe and you shall bee called *Choræbus quasi chori bos*, the very bull-head of all the troope of pamphleters: thou goest about to gather iestes and to barrell them vp into thine ale-howse index, that when occasion shall serue thou mightest be a *Democritus* alwayes to laugh thy selfe or to cause others to laugh by thy ideotisme. Thus to conclude, as *Daphne* chastitie, was turnd into a laurell tree, and so kept her chastitie, so / I wish that for thy wit thou mightest bee turnd into an asse, that so thou mightest keepe thy wit to thy selfe, and not defile the world withall. But this thou scornst, and wilt prooue that thou hast a good wit, and thus submissiuely in eloquence, to make vs belecue thee, at the first word thou beginst; Nature, that

neuer wont to be vnequall in her gifts, with mee hath broke her wont, and indowed me with a dowrie aboute the rest of her children : but euerie commoditie hath his discommoditie, and we cannot alwaies please all ; and though all my books did not take as I wished they should, yet most of them did take, as *Piers Pennileffe*, and others which I will not name, to auoyd suspition of vainglorie. *Argus* that had an hundred eyes sometime slept, or els hee had not dyed for it : and when *Mercurie* came, hee had no power to hold ope his eyes. O fine speech ! By this I gather, that thou confest thy selfe to be *Argus*, and me *Mercury* : and if you be *Argus*, holde ope your eyes with a pox to ye. I meane yee no harme yet, yet I pipe not to you : but I thinke it will be my lucke to be as ill a scourge to you, as euer *Mercurie* was to *Argus*. But if you will dispute and prooue that you haue a good wit, awaye with your confused bibble babble, binde vp your Arguments into Syllogismes and I will answere you directly. Content say you, and thus you begin. If my fame be spred far abroad, & all the Countrey confirme that I haue a good wit, then tis true that I haue a good wit : But the first proposition is true, therefore I haue a good wit. I answer, Poore and illiterate Opponent, to contex no firmer argument against so firme a Logician as I am. A double

Response or Answer extempore I can afford you. First, though your name be blazed abroad, it followes not that you should haue a good wit: for as an emptie vessell will found farre that hath nothing in it; so you may / cracke your selfe abroad, and get to be reported the man you are not.

Secondly, I graunt that you are famous, and that the Countrey reports you wise. Sententiouly I answer, that by a figure the Countrey is taken here for the common rout onely: for none that can but write and read will euer agree to it; and *turba malum argumentum*, as much as to saye, the troublesome Commons assertion, neuer goes far currant. Thus leauing no hole for you to creepe in with a second obiection, you betake you to your second Argument.

If my wit (saye you) were not excellent and vnaunswerable, manie who are accounted to haue good wits, (to whom I haue oft giuen particular occasion) would haue answered mee: but they haue not answered mee, therefore my wit is excellent. Therefore I wyll answer thee.

I would to God thou & I were to dispute for the best Mayorship in *Spaine*; faith thou mightest euen cast thy cap at it. Dooft thou not know that the Lion scornes combat with the base? Wife-men (though moued) will not worke



revenge on euerie obiect? and the more stately oake, the more hardly fet on fire? More plainly in a similitude, the like reason is to bee gathered of the nettles.

Euen as the nettle keepeth her leafe cleaneft, for that no man purgeth his post-pendence (there your nose *Thomas*) with it; not because they cannot, but because it would sting them if they should, and so for that small good turne, it would worke them a more displeasure: so thou art suffered to be quiet, and not wrote against, not for that thou canst not bee answered, but that by answering thee they should but giue more fodder to thy poison, put more casting to thy gorge; and hee that intends / to meddle with dung, must make account to defile his fingers.

Thus thou art quite put downe, thou art drawne drie: me thinkes I perceiue thee wish for some Moderatour, that should crie; *Egregie Nash* (or, you great asse) *satis fecisti officium tuum*. And now for want of a Moderatour, my selfe (for fault of a better) will supplye that roome, and determine of our Disputation. And herein it shall not bee amisse, (the Question so requiring, and you also requiring it in that place of your Epistle, where you lay wit to my charge) first to tell what a good wit is. And whereas thou burthenest me to say, that *much extraordinarie*

*descant cannot be made of it*: thou lyeft. For how vniust were mans wits, not to affoord vs extraordinarie descant of that, which giueth vs descant for euerye thing?

A good wit (therefore) is an affluent Spirit, yeelding inuention to praise or dispraise, or anie wayes to discourfe (with iudgement) of euerie subiecte. Mistake me not (I pray you) and think not that I thinke all those to haue good wits, that will talke of euerie subiect, and haue an oare (as we say) in euerie mans boate: for manie fooles doo so, and so doost thou. These talke not with iudgement: they be like the Fellow, who swearing by God, and one standing by, correcting him, said; Fie on thee how thou talkest. What skills it said hee, so longe as I talke of God? So I say, thou carest not how without iudgement thou talkest on euerie thing.

A good wit is it that maketh a man, and hee is not a man, that hath not a good wit. The verie brutish and sauage beasts haue wit. Oxen and Asses by theyr wit choose out the best Pasture to feed in, and thou art no better: for diuers men will say, and especially Northeren men, to one that dooth anie thing vnhandsomely, whaten / a Nash it is, for what an asse it is, and an Asses all men know hath not a good witt.

Thus (by these descriptions) the definitiue sen-

tence of my determination is this; *Nashe*, thou hast not a good wit, thou art a filly fellow, and more filly than Syr *Thomas of Carleton*, who beeing a little ficke, and the bell tolling to haue him goe read Seruice, the Clarke of the Parish going to him, and telling him that the bell toalde for him, meaning to goe Read, he went presently and made his will, because the bell toalde for him: and so doo thou, plye thee, make thy Will, and dye betimes before thou beest kill'd, for thine owne wit will kill thee: and call you that a good wit that kills a man? All the Wifemen of *Greece* and *Gotam* neuer came to the miserie that thy good wit hath brought thee too. My minde pre-fageth the great confusion that thy good wit will bring vpon thee. For as the Cammell that (come hee into neuer so cleare a Fountaine) cannot drinke of the water, till hee hath soyled and fowled it with his feete: so whatfoeuer thy wit goeth about, it first defiles it, and so brings destruction to thine owne bodie. Thy wit, thy wit *Tom*, hath no roddes in pisse for thee, twil whip thee, twill worke thine ouerthrow, twill quite destroye thee: *Ateon* (as wise a man as you) no wayes could escape it, for all his loue to his hounds, and swift flight when he saw their felnes, but was deuoured of his owne dogs.

But why then (maist thou say) doo I oppose

my felfe againſt an Aſſe, ſeeing now I doo no more than all could doo, for all the beaſts in the field can inſult and triumph ouer the filly Aſſe, as well the creeping Snayle to her power as the fierceſt Tyger. *Aſinus a ſedendo*, becauſe euerie Childe can ride an aſſe: therefore tis rather a reproachfull ſhame for mee to meddle with thee, and /by that I get more diſcredit then the two Gods got diſhonors that conſpired the downe-fall of one feely, weake, vnable woman. The reaſon is, I onely am left to tell thee thou art an Aſſe, and if thou ſhouldſt not be tolde it, thou wouldſt not beleeuē that thou art an Aſſe. Therefore nowe at length knowe thine owne ſtrength, and knowing that thou art but feeble and haſt no ſtrength, bluſh and be aſhamed, and then thou ſhalt ſee that all the Country hath ſeene thy ignorance, though kept in ſilence, and howe this many a yeere thou haſt guld them, but they (gentle minded auditors) ſtill, ſtill expecting better, tooke all in good part whilſt thou like a cowardly vnſkilfull horſeman mounted on a iade, coruetteſt and ſheweſt thy Crankes among a company of valorous famous captaines, whoſe ſtirrop thou art not worthy to holde: alight and liſten vnto me, and I euen I, that neuer till now was acquainted with the preſſe, and acknowledge myſelfe farre vnfit for thoſe thinges thou profeſſeſt, I (I ſay) will read thee a

eye-beames will reflect vpon thy felfe, and will be burning glaffes to thine owne eyes.

And fo in a fury (the countries comming downe vpon / me) I like a ftout patron out of all the countries that preft me fore, chalenged out the moft valiant warrier of them all, *Mounfeir Ajax*, to fingle combate: him I ouercame, and of him I got fafe conduct, and hee hath promifed fafe conduct to all commers of that race, and moreouer, hee as another patron hath gotten for them all fafe conduct from hence to *Eely* by water. The good admonition thou giueft mee, that is to commence, I thankfully take and willingly would vndergoe, had I but one with whome I might keep mine acts.

As for mine anfwere I nothing doubt, that is kept (as I hope) with credit, but my replie is it I ftand on, I can get none to anfwere me: alas, thou art not able, neyther fit, for thy want of a beard taketh away halfe the fubieft of our difputation: not that I fay a beard would make thee wife and fo by that thou shouldft be fit to difpute, but becaufe in what Arte thou wouldft haue mee commence, in that I would difpute with thee: therefore fuppose I should demaund of thee the reafon why thou haft fo much haire on thy head, and fo thinne or rather almoft none at all on thy face? thou couldft not queintly anfwere, becaufe

the haire on thy head is twenty yeeres elder then that on thy beard, nor in naturall reason, because the braine seated in the head yeeldeth more moyfture about it then any way downward, by which moyfture haire commeth, but thou hafte too moift a braine that cannot holde and remember thefe thinges, or rather thou haft too hard and drye a braine, and fo thefe thinges were neuer impreft into it.

But / this is thine anfwere, tis Gods wil it should bee fo: Thou wert neuer borne to haue a beard: tis true indeed, thus thou mighteft anfwere to all the arguments in the worlde: but the want of a beard makes thee thus colde in anfwering, for a beard is a figne of a ftrong naturall heate and vigour: but the true anfwere is, thou feekeft too many wayes to caft out thine excrementes, thou art too effeminate, and fo becomft like a woman, without a beard. Againe, if I fhould demaund of thee why the haire of a mans head groweth downward and not vpward, *idem reuolueres*, this would bee thine anfwere, because it pleafeth nature. Dofte thou not know that haire is the couer of the head? and therefore if it will couer it muft lye downe: and doe not all the parts of a man growe downward, though the whole man growes vpward? And therefore the Philoſophers fay that a man turned downward is a plant: that as a

plant hath all her boughes, branches and leaues growe vpward, so all the parts of a man are vpwarde when he standeth on his head, as his feete, legs, armes, nose, fingers and the rest: but in faith thou turnd vpward or downeward art but a plant or stocke to bee ignorant in those thinges: why I maruell of what Art thou didst Commence Batchelor: if I had but the question that thou hadst at thy Sophisters Act, I would dispute on that: but nowe I see I cannot commence for want of an answerer, and I scorne to keepe myne acts *in tenebris*.

In this thy trimming, thou being so fit for it, I will worke a wonder on thee, and I will holde any man a wager that I will perform it, that is, whilst I am washing you I will request your *conniueance* and put my selfe to *conniueance*, and shaue you quite through, and when I haue done, you shall not be a haire the worfe. You may make /a riddle of the same if you will, but I will doe it, and when I haue done, raising my selfe on my tiptoes, I will so hunt thee for my pay, that thou shouldst bee in worfe case then the Beuer, who bites off his stones and <sup>Leaning on a</sup> <sup>iest.</sup> layes them in the way for the hunter: for which otherwise he should be hunted to the death: I thinke veryly and in my conscience, *I should breake thy head and not giue the rest againe.* Thou rude wretch, thou wilt be so *cosmologizd*,

if thou beeſt catcht heere, for calling our Maſters of Arte firſt *Stigmaticall*, that is burnt with an hot Iron : didſt thou euer know any of our Maſters of Arts burnt with any Irons? then thou calleſt them *ſinckanters*, which is a proper Epithite vnto thyſelfe, for *Sinckanter* commeth of *ſincke* and *antrum* a hole, and as all the puddle and filth in the channell, ſtill runnes all along till it comes to a hole or *antrum*, and there it ſinckes in : ſo all wickednes and abhord villany ſtill ſtraying abroad and ſeeking for an *antrum*, at laſt it findes thee which art the very ſincke and center where it reſtes. And ſurely if thou ſhouldeſt haue termed me ſo, I neuer would haue ſuffered it vnreuedged, for as the *Torpedo* being caught and layd on the ground, ſtriketh a torpou and numbnes into the hand of him that doth powre but water on her : ſo, I doe not thinke but that in thy Epistle thou calledſt me but *Dick*, which is my name contract, and other adiuncts which in their own nature are neither good nor bad, the very remembrance of me ſtroke ſuch a feare and numbnes into thy ioyntes, that yet thou ſhakeſt as not diſpoſſeſt of that fearefull feauer. I will ſtirre thee vp and make thee ſeething hot, and when thou art in thy heate, I will then quell thee by moouing of thee more and more, as when a pot ſeetheth if we lade it and mooue the liquor vp and down, euen while



it seetheth, wee shall make it quiet. Thou / little wotest of what a furious spirite I am, for I keeping among such spirits in this place, as thou sayst, am my selfe become a spirit, and goe about with howling cries with my launce in my hand to tortour thee, and must not returne home, till *Ignatius*-like thou shalt be carbonadoed, and I shall carrie on my launce-point thy bones to hang at my shop-windowe, in steed of a cronet of rotten teeth, as the trophies of my victorie : and this shalbe done, comest thou neuer so soone into my swinge.

Therefore keep out of my hant, I haue a walke, thou maist be blasted before thou comest neere

Spirit walks. my walke : if thou dost but looke backe and see mee in my walke, thy necke will stand awry, thy mouth distorted, thy lips vgly wrested, and thy nose hang hooke-wise. But rather I take thee to be a spirit, for that I talking with thee all this while, cannot haue a glance on thee.





But see, what art thou heere? *lupus in fabula*,  
a lop in a chaine? Nowe firra haue at you,  
tha'rt in my swinge. But soft, fetterd? thou art  
out againe: I cannot come neere thee, thou hast  
a charme about thy legges, *no man meddle with  
the Queenes prisoner*: now therefore let vs talke  
friendlye, and as *Alexander* sayd to hys Father

*Phillip*, who beeing forely wounded in the thigh in fight, and hardly escaping death, but could not / goe on the ground without halting, bee of good courage father, come foorth that euery step thou sets on the ground may put thee in minde of thy manly courage & vertue : so say I to thee, *Nasbe* come forth, be not ashamed of thy selfe, stretch out thy legs, that euery step thou goest, thy shackles crying clinke, may remember & put thee in minde of all thy goodnes and vertue : I am glad to see thee in this prosperitie, thou neuer wert so rich as now, thou neuer hadst so much money as would buy so faire a payre of fetters ; in very deed thou art beholding to thy keeper, that will trust thee with so faire a payre of fetters, neither would he if hee had thee not by the legge : but nowe thou art a good case, thou art no vagabond, now thou seruest a Master, and hast a house to goe to, and a couch to lye in, thou muste bee thriuing and prouident where thou art, and twill bee a good sauing for thee : now thou hast a clog at thy heele as the prouerbe is, thou must learne of *Aesops* dog to do as he did : that is, thou must crinch vp thy selfe round in thy couch all winter time and dreame of a goodly large chamber, faire lodgings and soft beds, and in the summer time thou must stretch thy selfe, lye all abroad snoring vpon thy couch, and thinke that silly lodging

(seeing thou feelest no cold) a stately chamber built of free stone, layd out with stately bay windowes for to take the ayre at. But what neede I tell thee of these thinges? thou knowest better then I howe to lye in pryson: for what a shame were it else for thee, that hast <sup>Holes in the top.</sup> many a day agoe beene free of all the prysons in London, nowe to learne thine occupation? Thou art a iourney-man long since: I doe not thinke but that thou art able to set ope shop in that trade: for if thou wert but a nouice in it, this deere yeere would quite kill thee.

But / say, how dost thou for victualls, doo not they of thy old acquaintance helpe thee? if euer thou hadst true frend, now let him show himselfe, for a frend is tried in aduersitie: and though the Romanes were wont to say, that a true frend was but the salt and sauce of a banquet; yet I say, that a true Frend to thee must be salt, sauce, bread, and all the meate beside. But thou hast neuer a true Frend, yet thou hast enough of those frends, that would be sauce to thy meate; that is, if thou couldst bid them to a supper, they would come to eate vp thy meat, and sawce it with fine talke. But (God knowes) thou hast no need of those frends, thou couldest bee sauce to thine owne meate. Fie on frendship, what is become of it? not one drop nor crum of

friendship betweene them all? A true Friend (as they say) were more necessarie than water and fire: for vnles hee come and call for it, thou canst not haue so much as fire and water; that is, a fire with a cuppe of small drinke by it to nourish thy bodie. What is become of those true Friends *Damon and Pythias, Castor and Pollux, Pylades and Orestes, Nisus and Euriolus, Perithous & Theseus*, whom death it selfe could neuer seperate? Dead? Then *Ioue* raise some deadly tyrant to massacre that cancred brood of thy companions, that leaue their iester desolate in the winter of his affliction. I curse them with more vehemencie, because I see some hope in thee, in that thou now seemest simply to betake thee to the truth. For whereas thou wert wont to cracke and brag abroad, and in-deuouredst to shew, that ther was no learning in which thou wert not expert, and how that thou wert indowed with plentie of the liberall Sciences; which thou knowest to be nothing so; now thou recantest, and in simple truth saist, thou hast no learning, no not so much as one of the liberall Sciences. Which thou shewest vnto vs by coming forth in thy fetters, for none of the sciences are bond-slaues, or kept in chaines: they are called liberall *quasi liberi* because they make men free. If these are not sufficient motiues for thee, happily let this moue thee, that by thy proficiencie

in philosophy since thou camst into prison, thou hearing of *Aesop* that dwelt in a tub; of *Anaxagoras*, who, in prison wrote his especial booke *Of the quadrature of the Circle*: of *Socrates*, who in prison studied Philosophy, and wrote verses, and yet (as *Cardan* saith) slept sweetly, so as *Socrates* gaue more light to the prison, then the prison gaue darknes to *Socrates*: And lastly of him that put out his owne eyes, and so eclipsed himself of the sight of the world, that he might haue a more cleere insight into the light of nature: keep thou thy self still in prison, eclipse thee from the sight of the world, gaze onely on thy selfe, that so thou more cleerely seeing thine owne deformed nature, mightst labour to reforme it, and bring thyselfe into light againe. But (saist thou) you are a merry man *M. Dicke*, it befits not the wise to mocke a man in miserie. In truth thou saist true *Tom*, and for my mindes sake I would not for a shilling but that thou hadst beene in prison, it hath made my worship so merry; but because thou continuest my precepts that am a Cambridge-man, from whence all vertue flowes, and is the very fountaine and Cunduit-head of all learning. O heere I could praise Cambridge an howre by the clocke.

Therefore I say, for thy contempt of me I will call thy keeper, and tell him how th'art stolne out of

prison & come to mee to helpe thee off with thy shackles. Noe *Thomas* noe, I am no pick-locke, I thanke God: I liue without picking, though thou liuest not without lockes. But are you gone? thou wert afraid of thy keeper, goe to the place from whence you came, & with a knaues name to / you. Ha, ha, if I had but followed this matter euen a little more, I could haue perswaded thee to liue and dye in prison. Alas, I could doo anie thing with thee now, all thy senses are so taken downe. Happie (quoth I) in prison? haplesse indeed. How happie is the owle caught fast in a lyme-bough, when all the smaller birdes doo chatter at her for ioye? How happie the Rat caught in a trappe, and there dies a liuing death? How happie the tyred Hart striken of the Hunter, who runnes panting, consuming her breath, and at last faints for want of breath? how happie the wearied hare pursued with dogs, euer looking when they shall teare her in peeces? and how happie the cunny-catching weasell insnared in the Parkers net, and hangd vpon a tree? thus happie art thou: with the owle thou art lymed and wondred at, with the Rat thou art sore prest, with the Hart thou art in a consumption, with the hare thou alwaies expectest a teareing, and with the weasell thou shalt be hanged. All these torments are in prison, a demi-hell, where (like fiends) the

prisoners crawl about in chaines, euerie one perplext with his feuerall paine; a darksome laborynth, out of which thou canst neuer passe, though guided by a thred.

O double vnhappie soule of thine, that liues so doubly imprisoned, first in thy bodie, which is a more stinking prison than this where thou art; then, that it accompanieth thy bodie in this prison. Were it not sufficient that one prison should tortor thy soule enough? No, first because thy soule hath too deepe a hand in all thy knaueries, tis so imprisoned and fettered to thy bodie, that it cannot go without it. Poore Soule, more miserable than the kings daughter captiuated & long time kept imprisoned in the Theeues <sup>Apostrophe</sup> <sub>Apuleius.</sub> houses, at last offering to /breake away, was condemned to be sewed into the Asses bodie & there to dye; for the asses bodie was dead, and nothing aliue in the asse (the prison) to trouble the Maid the prisoner. But thy prison is aliue, and all the affections in thy bodie are as stinking vermine & wormes in it, that crawl about thee, gnawing thee, and putting thee to miserie. She in short time was sure to die, and so to be free againe; thou art still in dying, and hoping for freedome, but still liuest, and this augments thy calamitie: she should haue had her head left out to breathe into the aire, but thou breathest into thy prison thy



bodie, that corrupts within thee, and so retournes to bee thyne owne poyson. Thus much miserie (poore soule) thine owne bodie affords thee, and by being with thy bodie in the second prison, all this is doubled. Now if thou wouldest bee free from thy prisons, make a hoale in thy first prison, <sup>Continuata</sup> <sup>Metaphora.</sup> breake out there, and so thou escapest both, thou neuer canst be caught again: and by this thou shalt crie quittance with thy bodie, that thus hath tormented thee, and shalt leaue him buried in a perpetual dungeon.

Here let mee giue a cut or two on thy latest bred excrements, before I goe to the finishing of the perfect Cut.

A little lumpe of lead, while it is round, will lye in a small roome, but being beaten it will spread broad, and require a larger place to contain it; and a roape bound fast vp, might easily be couered, but vnfolded & drawne out at length, it hardly can bee hidden: so you (simply considered) are of no report, but if you bee vntruff and beaten out, & your actions all vnfolded, your name cannot be limited. And now you, hauing a care of your credite, scorning to lie wrapt vp in obliuion, the moth of fame, haue augmented the stretcht-out line of your deedes, by that most infamous, most dunficall and thrice opprobrious worke *The Ile of Dogs*: for which you are greatly in request;

that, as when a stone is cast into the water, manie circles arise from it, and one succeedeth another, that if one goeth not round, the other following might be adioyned to it, and so make the full circle : so, if such infinite store of your deedes are not sufficient to purchase to you eternall shame and sorrow, there arise from you more vnder then to helpe forward : and last of all commeth this your last worke, which maketh all sure, and leaueth a signe behind it. And of this your last worke, I must needs say somewhat : <sup>Cropt ears.</sup> for seeing that this my first work & off-spring hath remained in my womb beyond the time allotted, it must needs be growen greater ; and if it become a monster, it must needs be in exceffe.

O yes, O yes : if there be anie manner of man, person or persons, can bring anye tidings of Tho : Nashe Gentleman, <sup>A proclama-  
tion for T.  
Nashe.</sup> let hym come and giue knowledge thereof, & hee shalbe plenteoufly rewarded.

Hearke you *Thomas*, the Crier calls you. What, a fugitiue ? how comes that to passe, that thou a man of so good an education, & so wel backt by the Muses, shouldst prooue a fugitiue ? But alas, thy Muses brought thee to this miserie : you and your Muses maye euen goe hang your selues : now you

may wish, that he that first put the Muses into your head, had knockt out your hornes. But seeing it hath so happened, call for your *Thalia* among your Muses, let her play some musique, and I will dance at / your hanging? But twas prouidence in thee, to foresee thy woe, and to labour to eschew it, if not by auering what you haue said, and standing too it, yet by shewing your heeles. For as the Prouerbe; *Ubi leonina pellis insufficiens est, vulpina astutia assuenda est.* If by strong hand you cannot obtaine it, light heeles are to be required: for one paire of legs are worth two payre of hands. And of all the parts of thy bodie, thy legges are thy most trustie seruants: for in all thy life whenas thou couldest not obtaine of anie of the parts of thy bodie to effect thy will, yet legs thou hadst to commaund for to walke and flee whether soeuer was thy pleasure, neither now in this extremitie doo they deceiue thee. O, how much art thou beholding to thy legs? *Bankes* was not so much beholding to his Horse, that serued to ride on, and to doo such wonderfull cranks, as thou art to thy leggs, which haue thus cunningly conuayed thee. If euerie begger by the high wayes side (hauing his legs corrupted and halfe destroyed with botches, byles and fistulaes) maketh much of them, getteth stilts and creepeth easily on them, for feare of hurting them, because they

maintaine them, and prooue better vnto them than manie an honest Trade ; then why shouldest not thou (by an argument *a malo in peius*) make much of thy legs, which by speedie carriage of thee from place to place to get thee victualls, do not onely maintaine thy life, but also at this time haue saued thy life, by their true seruice vnto thee. Wherefore (these things considered) thou canst not chuse but in all humilitie offer thy old shooes for sacrifice to *Thetis* for thy swift feet. And twas wisely done of that high dread Liech *Apollo* to appoint *Pisces* the signe to the feete, to shew that a man should be as swift as a fish about his affaires. Neuerthelesse can I accuse you of lazines : for all this time of your vagation, with you I / thinke the Signe hath been in *Pisces*. Now in this thy flight thou art a night-bird, for the day wil bewray thee : the Bat and the Owle be thy fellow trauellers. But to come roundly vnto you, this cannot long continue ; the Owle sometime is snared in the day seafon, and olde Father Time at length will bring you to light. Therefore, were you as well provided to continue your flight, as is the beast *Ephemeron*, which becaufe shee hath but one day to liue, hath manie legs, foure wings, and all what Nature can afford, to giue her expedition to see about the world for her one dayes pleasure : or as *Pegasus* that winged Horse, which in swiftnes equalleth the

Horfes of the Sunne, which in one naturall day perambulate all the world : or as the beast *Alce*, which runneth on the snow with such celeritie that she neuer sinketh vnto the ground. Were you (I say) as swift as anie of these, you shall be catcht, such is your destinie : and then your punishment shall be doubled on you, both for your flying, and your other villanie.

Since that thy Ile of Dogs hath made thee thus miserable, I cannot but account thee a Dog, and chide and rate thee as a Dog that hath done a fault. And yet doo not I know why I should blame Dogs? for *Can*, which signifieth a Dog, is also a most trustie seruant; for that Dogs are faithfull seruants, to whome their Masters in the night time giue in charge all their treasure. They are at commaund to waite vpon their Masters, whether they bend their iourney, to fight for them against their enemies, and to spend their liues to defend them, and to offend their aduersaries, as we read of King *Cazament* : who beeing exilde, brought with him from banishment two hundreth Dogges, which (with wonderfull fiercenesse) warred against their resistants : in whom hee reposed much more confidence & hope of victorie, again to / be seated on his throne, than if hee had been defended by a mightie hoast of armed men. And *Iasons* dogge, his master being dead, neuer would eate anie

meate, but with great griefe and hunger died for companie. *Tycinus* the *Sabine* had a dogge which accompanied hym to prifon, and when he was dead, he remained howling by the carcaffie : to whom when one caft meate, he laid it to the mouth of his dead mafter, to reuiue him againe: and when his corpes was throwen into the riuier *Tybris*, the dogge leapt after it, fo that all the people wondered at the loue of this faithfull creature. *Pirrhus* the King going a iourney, came by a dogge which kept the bodie of a dead man : which when hee faw, he commaunded the bodie to be buried, and the dogge to bee brought home with him: this done, a few dayes after came fouldiours before the King, among whom the dogge efpied them which killed his mafter, and barked incessantly at them ; sometime looking and fawning on the King, and then barked againe. At which figne the King aſtoniſhed, examined them, and vpon light examinations they confeſſed the murder, and tooke puniſhment for it. Further, we read of a dogge called *Capparus* in *Athens*, which in the night purfude a Theefe that robbed a Church, & being driuen backe with ſtones by the Theefe, followed him aloofe off, but alwayes kept him in fight, and at laſt came to him, and fat by him while he ſlept. The next morne, ſo ſoone as euer the funnes golden crowne gan to appeare, and his

ferie steedes trapperd in their caparifons fet on their wonted race, the theefe fleeing, the dogge ftill kept his chafe, and complaind in his language to the paffengers of the theefe. At laft he was taken and brought backe, before whom the dog came all the way leaping and exulting for ioy, as to whome all the prayfe was due for this deed.

The / *Athenians* decreed that for this publique good, the dogge should be kept by publique charges, and the care of his keeping was alwaies afterward layd vpon the Priests. And I feare mee, and almoft diuine fo much, that the verrie dogges (wherefoeuer thou plaift leaft in fight) will bewraye thee and bring thee to thy torture. Againe, (among the *Aegiptians*) *Saturne* was called *Kyon*, becaufe as a pregnant woman, he begot all things of himfelfe and in himfelfe; and in antique time they worshipping dogges, and had them in great account, till on a time when *Cambyfes* killed a man and caft hym away, no other beaft but a dog rauened in the dead carcaffes.

Laftly, to come neerer to your felfe, you fhall heare of a dogge that was an excellent Actor. In *Rome* there was a ftage-player, which fet out a *Historie* of diuers perfonages, among whom there was a dogge to be poisoned and reuiue againe; a Part of no leffe difficultie than the King or the clowne, and was as well perfourmed:

for (at his time) he eate the poyson, and presently (drunkard-like) stackered vp and downe, reeling backward and forward, bending his head to the ground, as if it were too heauie for his bodie, as his Part was; and at last fell downe, stretcht himselfe vpon the stage, and lay for dead. Soone after, when his Cue was spoken, first by little and little he began to mooue himselfe, and then stretching forth his legs, as though he awaked from a deepe sleepe, and lifting vp his head, lookt about him : then he arose, and came to him to whom his part was he should come : which thing (besides the great pleasure) mooued wonderfull admiration in olde *Vespasian* the Emperour there present, and in all the other that were spectators.

These prettie tales of dogges might keepe mee from chi/ding of thee, but thou art no such dogge; these were all well nurtured when they were whelps, you not so: the worme was not pluckt out from vnder your tongue, so that you haue run mad, and bit venome euer since : for these are the properties of a mad dog. First, the blacke choller which raigneth in them turneth to madnes most commonly in the Spring-time and in Autumne : and you though you are mad all the yeere, yet haue shewed the signe of it especially this last Autumne ; they alwaies run with their



mouthes open and their tongues hanging out : wee know howe wide your mouth is, how long your tung ; your mouth is neuer shut, your tongue neuer tyed : flauer and fome fall from their iawes as they run, and tis but flauer that proceedeth from thy mouth : though their eyes be open, yet they stumble on euery obiect ; so though thou seeft who offends thee not, yet thou all offendest : they whofoeuer are bitten with a mad dog also run mad, and they whom thy vlcered tongue did bite, are so stirred vp by it, that till they haue got you and wormed you, they cannot be well : thus you may see to what misery you were borne. Woe to the teats of thy Dam that gaue thee suck, and woe to blind fortune, that she opened not her eyes to see to affoord thee better fortune : and woe to the dog-daies, for in those thou wroughtest that which now works thy woe : take heede heerafter what you do in dog-daies. The natures secretaries record of that kinde of goate called *Oryx*, that all the yeere her throate is shut, the strings of her voice tyed, til dog-daies come, & then that very day and houre in which the dog-starre first appeareth (at which time dog-daies begin) shee openeth her voyce and crieth : the like miracle these last dog-daies haue done of thee, for what all the whole yeere could not bring to passe, and all the Country long haue

ex / pected, that is, thy confusion, these dog-dayes by thine owne wordes haue effected : therefore happy hadst thou beene if thou hadst remained still in London, that thou mightest haue bin knockt on the head with many of thy fellowes these dog-daies: for nowe the further thou fleest, the farther thou runst into thy calamitie: there is watch layd for you, you cannot escape; th' art in as ill a taking as the Hare, which being all the day hunted, at last concludes to dye, for (said she) whether should I flye to escape these dogs: if I should flye to heauen, there is *canis* <sup>The dog-</sup>  
*fidus celeste* : if I should run into the <sup>starre.</sup> *The dog-fish.*  
 sea, there is *canis piscis marinus*, and heere on earth millions of dogges seeke to torment me; aye me, heauen, earth and sea conspire my tragedy: and as wofull as the Cunny which escaping the Weafell fell into the hunters net, of which was that pythie Epigram, Would to God the Weafell with my bloud had sucked out my life, for nowe I am kept a pray for the rauening dogs, and cruell-harted mā fits laughing whilst my body is broken vp, and my guts deuided into many shares: and though yet thou hast escaped thy snares, it will not bee long ere thou beest taken, and then the'rs laughing worke for all the Country; for though thy body were shared out into infinite indiuiduals, yet euery one could not

haue his part whome thou haft abused, for recompence for thy iniury done vnto him.

Nowe let mee see thy punishment for thy Isle of dogges: tis an auncient custome in our Countrie when wee take a dogge that hath done a fault, presently to crop his eares; and this surely for thy fault is thy punishment: but why (might some say) are thine eares punished for thy tongues fault? I / answere, thine eares are worthy to be punished for not discharging their office: for whereas they should heare before thou speakest, as they that be skilfull at the ball, first receiue the ball before they cast it foorth againe; and into a vessell there is first infusion before there be effusion out of the same; the ouer pregnant dog (we see) bringeth forth blind puppies, and the spider that prepares her matter and weaues her webbe together at the same time, makes but slender worke of it, and easie to be broken of euery flye. I say, whereas thou shouldst first haue heard, thou first speakest: thy tongue was in thy eares place; and for this cause thine eares are iustly punished.

Nature gaue thee two eares and but one tongue, because thou shouldest heare more then thou shouldest speake, but because thou hast spokē more than euer thou heardst, thine eares shall bee taken from thee: She set thine eyes and thine eares both of equall highnes and alwaies open, that they

might bee ready to heare and to see, but thy tongue she put into a case that it might bee slowe to speake; but thine eares were dull to heare, and thy tongue too quicke of speach: Therefore thine eares deserue their punishment: Then to bee short, to haue thine cropt is thy punishment: What *Tom*, are thine eares gone? Ha, ha, ha.

*O fine man will you buy a fine dog?* Why thou art in the fashion, thou art priuiledged Crop-eard first wore lockes. to weare long lockes by ancient charter:

but now if the fashion were as hot as euer twas to weare ringes in their eares, faith thou must weare thine euen in thy tongue, because that cosoned thee of thine eares: are thy eares so moueable? art thou a monfter? indeede all beafts haue free mouing of their eares graunted to them, but for men I neuer knew any but thee haue their eares mouing, and thine I see to haue the gentle quite remou[d]: I thinke tis a diseafe, / for I am assured tis a horrible paine to bee troubled with the mouing of the eares. I coniecture no goodnes by this strange accident of moueable eares this yere. I hope shortly we shall haue Ballads out of it. I am afraid I tell you by this strange signe, that we shall haue a wet winter this yere: for if it be true (which the Philosophers affirme) that when an Asses eares hang downe toward the ground, tis a certaine signe of raine instant, then seeing

thine eares not only hang toward the ground, but euen drop down to the ground, how can it chuse but be a signe of great wet at hand? and to thee it should be a cause of perpetuall showers that should flow from thine eyes : but thou art drye, no droppe of grace from thine eyes. If taking away of thine eares could take away thy hearing too, twere some profit for thee, for then thou shouldst not heare thy selfe railed on, laughed at, nor know thy selfe to be a mocking stocke to all the Country : but there is a more plaine way made to thy hearing organs, so that thou shalt more lightly heare thy selfe euery where cald crop-eard curre. What wilt thou giue me if I (I am a Chirurgion) make a newe paire of eares grow out of thy head, which passeth *Appolloes* cunning, that so thou maist stil liue with fame in thine own countrie, or if I heale them as though thou neuer hadst any, that I may goe with thee into Germanie and there shew thee for a strange beast bred in England, with a face like a man, with no eares, with a tung like a venomous serpent, and a nose like no body. The last I care not if I consented to, if thou woldst liue in good order but one half yere : but to the first, that is to giue thee new eares, I neuer wil grant thogh thou shouldst be inspired to liue orderly al the residue of thy life, no though I had wax & al things ready : for long

agoe hast thou deserued this disgrace to be carelesse, euer since thou beganst to write: for libels deserue that punishment, and euery booke which yet thou / hast written, is a libell, and whomsoever thou namest in thy booke hath a libell made of him, thou purposing to speake well of him; such is the malice of thy cankerd tongue. Therefore thou deseruedst to loose thine eares for naming the Bishop of *Ely* and of *Lincolne*, and for writing of *Christes teares ouer Ierusalem*: how darest thou take such holy matters into thy stinking mouth, so to defile and polute them? Your Dildoe & such subiects are fit matter for you, for of those you cannot speak amisse: the more you raile of thē the neerer you touch the matter: but because you were not punished for those libels, you began your olde course againe, *canis ad vomitum*, you began to chew the cud of your villanie and to bring more libels into light. But I hope this last libell will reuenge the rest.

We heare howe you threatned to spoile our stirring Satirist: alas, haue thy writings such efficacie? indeed they are poysoned, but poison will not worke on euery subiect: and if thou shouldst but name him, so that it might giue but any blemish to his fame, assure thy selfe to bee met withal of troops of Scholers which wil soone make thee be one of *Terence* his parasits: in wounds

thou shalt exceed *Casianus* which was so pittifully pinked of his own Schollers : & now whilst I am in the hot inuectiue, I haue a message to doe to you : the townsmen of *Cherrihinton* send you cōmendations, & they demaund a reson of you why you call them clownes? they say, they neuer offered you any wrong, wherefore if euer you come that waye, they will fend all the dogs in the town after you to pluck off your ears if they be not gone before you come. Now I thinke it be time to remember my promise to the readers, that is that I be not irkesome to them with tediousnes, that so they might with good acceptance digest what hetherto they haue read : therefore I will drawe toward an end and so finish the perfect Cut.

Where/as thou commendst thy Epistle to me as a garment for a foole, and therefore that it should bee long : I (as is thy desire) haue cut it with my sciffers, layd it ope, and according to that pattern haue made a coate for thy selfe, but it is so short that thou shalt not neede to curtaile it : for some fooles haue long coates for that cause onely, that they might the better hide their folly and couer their nakednes, which els all should see : yet I haue made thy coate short and little, that by thy behaiour in it thou mayst bewray to others thy simplicitie, & if I had tooke in hand to haue

made it great enough to couer al thy folly, this is not the twentieth part of stufte that wold haue ferued, neither possibly couldst thou haue had thy new coate against this time : but seeing thy garment is dispatcht for thee, weare it and vse it well, for the fashion of long cloathes is wearing away, & short cloathes will shortly be in request againe, and then thou shalt be a foole of the fashion, as soone as the proudest of them all.

Againe, this coate for thy body and the coole irons for thy legges, will be a most cooling sute for thee all this Summer time : therefore make much of it, let it not bee thy euery day sute, but as the *Utopians* were wont to make them sutes of leather, which lasted seuen yeeres, in which they did all their labour, and when they went abroad they cast on their cloakes, which hid their leather cloathes and made them seeme comely and handsome : so if thou canst but get some old, greasie, cast fustian sute to weare within dores, this coate will serue thee to cast on to iet abroad in, and doe thee credit.

Wherefore (good *Tom*) I exhort thee to keepe thee (whilst thou art) in good case, thou art well apparelled, it may bee thou presently wilt bestowe a coate of mee : doe not so, all thy coates are threed-bare / and I neede them not, though thou hast many, for I know thou hast three or foure



coates ready made (like a falesman) for some body : then, to which foeuer thou fowest but a patch or two cōcerning me, that coat shal serue me : thou puttest diuers stufte into one coate, and this is thy vse in all thy confutations, as in this thy book thou bringest into the partie against whom thou writest, his brothers: which argueth (as I sayd before) want of inuention ; but skils not, thou art priuileged neuer to goe from the matter, it might as well bee permitted in thee as in the historian, that promising to speake of the faith of the Iewes, made a long tale of *Nilus*: but (as I said) be a good husband *Tom* and keep thy coate to thy selfe, thou wilt need them al : and when this coate which I bestowe on thee shall waxe threed-bare, I will dresse it for thee the second time and giue it thee againe.

This I speak not to wage discord against thee, but rather to make an end of all iarres, that as wife & husband will brawle and be at mortall fewde al the day long, but when boord or bed time come they are friendes againe and louingly kisse one another : so though hetherto we haue disagreed and beene at oddes, yet this one coate shall containe vs both, which thou shalt weare as the cognifaunce of my singuler loue towards thee, that wee liuing in mutuall loue may so dye, and at last louing like two brothers *Castor* and *Pollux*, or the

two sifters *Vrfa maior* and *Vrfa minor*, wee may bee carried vp to heauen together, and there translated into two starres.

Finally, these thinges considered aright, in loue I beseech thee (that thou maist see I am not past grace) to suffer mee to retort thy grace, and so to end: which my selfe will follow for you; you suing *sub forma pauperis*. /

*A Grace in the behalfe of Thomas Nashe.*

To all ballet-makers, pamphleters, presse hanter, boon pot poets, and such like, to whom these presents shall come, greeting: Wheras *Tho: Nashe* the bearer heereof, borne I know not where, educated sometime at *Cambridge*: where (being distracted of his wits) he fell into diuers misdemeanors, which were the first steps that broght him to this poore estate. As namely in his fresh-time how he florished in all impudencie toward Schollers, and abuse to the Townesmen; infomuch that to this daye the Townf-men call euerie vntoward Scholler of whom there is great hope, *a verie Nashe*. Then being Bachelor of Arte, which by great labour he got, to shew afterward that he was not vnworthie of it, had a hand in a Show called *Terminus & non terminus*: for which his partner in it was expelled the Colledge: but this foresaid *Nashe* played in it (as I suppose) the

Varlet of Clubs; which he acted with such natural affection, that all the spectators tooke him to be the verie same. Then suspecting himself that he should be stared for *egregie dunsus*, and not attain to the next Degree, said he had comment enough, and so forsooke *Cambridge*, being Batchelor of the third yere. Then he raised him selfe vnto an higher Clime; no lesse than *London* could serue him: where somewhat recouered of his wits, by the excrements thereof (for the space of nine or ten yere) hee hath got his belly fed and his backe cloathed. As also I hope you are not ignoraunt how hee hath troubled the Presse all this time, and published fundrie workes & volumes, which I take with me as humble fellow-futers to you, that you being all in one straine (and that very low, he in a higher key) you would vouchsafe to take him as your graduate Captain generall in all villanie; to which villanie conioyn your voyces and in which villanie praye and / say together, *Viuat, moriatur Nashe*. To these premisses, that they are true, and that hee among you all is onely worthie this title, I (as head Lecturer) put too my hand.

*Richard Lichfield.*

But *Tom*, thy selfe art past grace: for some of thyne owne faction, enuying thy proficiencie and

honour to which thou aspirest, hath pocketted thy Grace. O enuie, catterpillar to vertue! But let him know that thou hast a Patron will sticke to thee, and that thou art gracious in more Faculties than one; I will put vp another Grace for thee; wherein he shall haue no voyce, and one onely man an old friend of thine shall strike it dead.

*A Grace in the behalfe of Thomas Nashe, to the right worshipfull and grand Commander of all the Superrants & subtercubants of Englands great Metropolis, the Prouost Marshall of London.*

Forasmuch as *Thomas Nash* fundrie and oftentimes hath been cast into manie prisons (by full authoritie) for his mis-behauiore, and hath polluted them all, so that there is not one prison in *London*, that is not infected with *Nashes euill*: and being lately fet at libertie, rangeth vp and downe, gathering poyson in euerie place, whereby he infecteth the common aire; I am to desire you, that as you tender the common good of the weale publike, and as the vertue of your office requireth, which is to clense the City of all vitious and vnruely perfons, when this aboue named *Nashe* shall happen into your precinctes or dioces of your authority, you would giue him his vnction in the highest degree, and clense vs quite of him, which you shall effect thus: send him / not to prisons any more, which are corrupted by him already, but commit

him to be *Procter of the Spittle*, where hee shall not stay long, leaft hee breed a plague among them also: but passe frō him to Bull, who by your permission hauing ful power ouer him and being of such amiable and dexterious facility in discharging his duety, will soone knit the knot of life and death vpon him, strōger then that Gordian knot neuer to bee loosed, and by that pritty trick of fast and loofe, will loose your Cittie from him and him from all his infections, and will hang him in so sweet & clear a prospect as that it wilbe greatly to your credit to see the great concourse thether of all sects of people: as first I with my brethren the Barber-Chirurgions of London, wil be there, because we cannot phlebotomize him, to anatomize him and keep his bones as a chronicle to shew many ages heereafter, that sometime liued such a man, our posteritie hauing by tradition what he was, and you in some part might be chronicled (as well as S. George) for destroying this serpent: thē there will flock all the Cunni-catchers of London to see the portraiture of the architectours of their arte: lastly, al the Ballad-makers of London his very enimies that stayed his last grace, will be there to heare his confession, and out of his last words will make Epitaphes of him, & afterward Ballads of the life and death of *Thomas Nash*. Let this grace passe as soone as

may bee : if not for any perticular loue to him, yet as you are a Magistrate of the Cittie, and ought to knowe what tis to prefer a publike commoditie if this grace passe not, hee is like to bee stayde finally till the next yeere. I his head-lecturer present him to you.

*Richard Lichfield.*

Thus / (curteous Gentlemen) I haue brought you to the ende of his trimming, though he be not so curiously done as he deserueth : hold mee excused, hee is the first man that euer I cut on this fashion. And if perhaps in this Trimming, I haue cut more partes of him then are necessarie, let mee heare your censures, and in my next Cut I will not be so lauish : but as the Curate, who, when he was first instald into his Benefice, and among other Iniunctions being inioyned (as the order is) to forewarne his Parish of Holy-daies, that they might fast for them : and thinking all those Holy daies which hee saw in hys Calender written with red letters, on a time said to hys Parishioners, You must fast next wensday for Saint *Sol in Virgo*, which is on thurfday, because he saw it in red letters. Which mooued laughter to the wife of the Parish ; who presently instructed him, that ouer what red words soeuer he saw *Fast* written, those hee should bid Holi-dayes : so in short time

he became expert in it. In like manner, I hauing but newly taken Orders in these affaires, if heere I haue been too prodigall in *snip snaps*, tell me of it, limit me with a Fast, and in short time you shall see me reformed.

FINIS. /



\*\*\*\*\*

VIII.

THE STORY OF MERCY HARVEY,  
SISTER OF DR. GABRIEL HARVEY—  
LOVE-SUIT WITH A NOBLEMAN.

1574-75.

\*\*\*\*\*



#### NOTE

Thomas Nash among the many gossip-tales worked into his answers to Harvey, slyly and ungallantly, brings up an alleged 'going astray' of the Scholar's sister 'Mercy.' In the published books there are only passing notices and denials of this ; but in the 'Letter-Book,' (as before) there is preserved perhaps as extraordinary a narrative of old-world making suit as is anywhere to be found. It has been represented to me by those who have a right to be heard, that this Narrative ought to find a place in Harvey's Writings. It accordingly follows. See Notes and Illustrations in Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*; also Nash's Works and their Glossarial-Index, *s.v.* I gladly avail myself of Mr. E. J. Long Scott's painstaking reproduction of Sloane MS. 93, in the British Museum ('Letter-Book,' pp. 143-58). He thus comments on it :—"Now we come to the strangest episode in the whole 'Letter-Book,' where Harvey writes out at full length, with scarcely any attempt at concealment, the whole story of a young married nobleman making a dishonourable pursuit of his sister Mercy. It is true he does not give the nobleman's surname or title, but he mentions his Christian name of Phil, and tells of his aunt, 'my lady of W—'; so that it would be quite possible to satisfy our curiosity by a slight search, if any good were to be gained by raking up old scandals. . . . We learn that this courtship took place during the winter of 1574-5, which we are told . . . was a marvellous wet year at Christmas-tide, by reason of the rain and snow that fell together. The discovery of the correspondence by Gabriel himself seems to have put an end to the disgraceful affair ; at least, we hear no more of the matter after his letter to the young lord" (Preface, p. xvi).

A. B. G.



1. A Sundaie supper at Mr. S.
2. The first meating in ſ feild a litle ſtraunge, moouing ſ matter a far of, without offer of anie thing, vppon ſ Munday ſennight after.
3. The 2 meating in ſ feild more plaine, with wines, cakes, glooues, girdell, ſ next Tuesday being halliday, a halliday breakefaſt.
4. A thre or fower daies after at J. R. ſ ſmall inameld ring with a ribben of vrring tanye.
5. Milord and his man P. ſ next Weddenſday preſently after fiue a clock in ſ euening (a marvelous foggie miftie eueninge) came vp ſ ſtreate purpoſely to ſpeake with ſ maide, and ſeing ſ dore ope, ſtepd in; but P. ſpying in ſ maulthowſe (P. had on foote in ſ mault howſe) ſ maides mother and ſiſter with ſum of ther ſeruantes, ſum turning ſ mault, ſum ſteaping, ſum looking on, they were faint to get them homewards, as wiſe as thei cam. A great iorney loſt. Milord ſwore to P. he had rather haue ridden fortie miles then haue taken ſutch a iorney in ſutch a miftie night.

6. Herevppon ſ̄ maide writt her firſt letter, then on vppon an other as thei followe in order. With ſ̄ " thirde " ſeconde letter of Milords, cam a prettie bowed goulden ring, which P. ſwore Milord tooke from his owen fingar to fende her.

All this time of letters ſending had P. manie a ſhrode wettie iorney; and euermore in ſ̄ euening, nether could he ſpeake with ſ̄ maide, but thurrough a pale, for all this while he neuer cam in her fathors howſe, nether could he cum to ſ̄ ſpeach of her, euerie time he cam, but nowe and then loſt his iorny.

A NOBLE MANS SUTE TO A CUNTRIE MAIDE.

Firſt his man P. bad her to ſ̄ eating of a couple of cunnies in ſ̄ towne, which ſ̄ yung lord was priuie too, as P. ſwore afterward.

Within a ſennight after, P. watchd her going a milking a mile from ſ̄ towne, hauing with him a bottle of mamſey and ſhort chakes, to mooue her appetite.

The mamſey was drunk of, and ſ̄ chakes eaten in a wood they paſſid thurrough, none being there but P. and ſ̄ maide and a pore woman that bare ſ̄ maide cumpanie.

The woman going a litle aſide to gather vpp ſticks that lay ſcattering in ſ̄ wood, P. began to commenſe his maſters ſute, marry not ſo flatly as

afterwarde, to feele of a like ſ̄ maides minde. The maide could not be brought to beleue his maſter ether knewe her, or would motion any futch ute to any other, hauing ſo goodlie a ladie of his owne.

P. was well prouidid to anſwer to all futch doubtſes, and ſwore deepely to ſ̄ maide, that both his maſter knewe her (by that token, that ſhe paſſing once by him, when he was bowling in futch a place, her hatt blue of, and ſhe therewith ſumwhat chaungid her colour) and ſet more by her than he did by his owne ladie.

She ſtill was vnbeleeuing, ſaying ſhe knewe well Mielord paſſid not for ſo homelie wenchis, that ſhe was but a milkmaide, and a plaine cuntrie wench, and if Mielord were ſo diſpoſid he might haue manie a on at commaundiment far more likelie then ſhe.

P. notwithstanding all this continued his ſute, and would needes make her take a good faier ſylk girdell and a hanſum paier of glooues that Mielord, he ſaid, had ſent her, prommiſing her, with many a luſtie othe, that if ſhe would graunt Mielord his requeſt, ſhe ſhould not neede to care for ſ̄ leefiſt frende ſhe had, but ſhould be thus and thus maintainid. Still ſ̄ maide kept aloofe, and made verie ſtraung, taking it to be P. owne ſute, and not Mielords. Wherevppon P. ſwore he would

bring sum other token from Mielord, that she should not choose but think it was he, and no other, that desirid her cumpanie.

Within a daie or twoe after he brought her a prettie inammeld ring with this posie, DON JAMYE, which he swore Mielord took from his owne hatt not two howers before, whereon it was sown, giuen him by his awnt, Mieladie of W , saing Mielord would as leue haue sent her half a score ould aungels, but that those might as likely cum from sum other man.

These thinges seemid maruelous straung to ſ cuntrie wenche, in so mutch that she was half amafid at ſ matter, and therefore could not well tell what answer she should returne to Mielord. Only, like a good plaine wench, she saied she could not but thanke him for his loouing tokens. Marry, yeeld vnto him she durst not in aniewise. And so pleaded for hir honestie as well as she could ; nether would giue anie signification of graunting his request.

Whereat P. saied he maruelid mutch, hauing so faier offers of Mielord ; swearing that if she were his owne sifter he would counsell her, and desier her too, to yeeld vnto him. Yea, saith he, by the bodie of God, you make more straung than most gentlewomen would do of fise hundrid pounds a yeare. And assure yourself Mielord maie haue manie

a good gentlewoman and ladie tooe at commaundiment ; by the Mas, if you denie him his request, you ar the veriest foole in y world ; with a manie futch whot and ernest wordes. Whereto y maide knewe not well what to say, but wild him to desier Mielord to be contentid, she could not in that case fulfill his minde. Marry, any other way she thought her self bownde to his Lordship in respect of futch kindnes. Still P. laied at her to appoint sum place where Mielord might meete with her, for Mielord was maruelous desirous to speake with her.

Alas, said she, I knowe not in what fort to behaue myself before his Lordship ; what should he so desier to speake with me ?

Well, in the end, the maide being thus importunately laied at, that at y left Milord might cum to y speach of her, prommifid that if he would cum ouer to her fathers howse, in futch a streat, vppon futch a daye towards the euening (this day was Weddensday, almost a fennight after,) she would be there to speake a word or twoe with him. This day came, and Milord and P. cam according to ther appointment. But in steade of the maide her self, which was not there, there were as it happenid in y maulthowse the maides mother, her sifter, and two of her fathers seruants, and in y parlour on of her bretheren, that sa[w]e them cum faier and softly vpp y streate, and stay a

prettie while at ſ̄ dore, looking of a like to be interteinid of ſ̄ maide, but ſhe not being at hande, as thei hopid for, thei ſteppid both prettely in to ſ̄ entry, and P. went pering to ſ̄ maulthowſe dore to ſpie if ſhe were there, but hauing on of his fitt in ſ̄ maulthowſe, he ſa[w]e that he lookid not after, and miſſid that he came for. Wherevppon thei conueied themſelues away as hanſumly as thei could, and were fainte to gett themſelues home-wards as they cam, being well mirid and wried for ther labour, beſides that it was the miſtief and foggieſt night that was that winter.

Notwithſtanding this, P. vſid meanes to ſpeake with ſ̄ maide againe within a day or two after, telling her howe Milord was diſapointid, and what a weriſum and toiling iorny he had taken in vaine, ſaiyng, moreouer Milord did half ſuſpect ſhe mockid him, &c.

The maid quitt herſelf as hanſumly as ſhe could of the præſent, ſaying that ſhe could not poſſibely be there at that time as things fill owte : and if ſhe had bine there, there had bene no ſpeaking with Milord at that time, &c.

Marry to ſatisſie Milords mind, who, as P. ſaied, thought himſelf deludid, ſhe prommiſid within a daye or twoe to purge herſelf to Milord by letter. Which was as P. would haue it, for then he thought her deade ſuer.

P. cummes me the next night for her letter.

It was not finnishid.

He cummes againe ſ next daye.

She could not be ſpoke withall.

Bye the third daye ſhe had addreſſid “her” this letter, and gaue it vnto P. at his cumminge:—

Milord, though mie bringing vpp hath bene allwaies ſo homelie and milksmaidelike, that I know not in what fort to behaue mieſelf towards your lordſhip, ether for talk or for other ſeemelie behaiour; yet to ſatisfie your lordſhips minde (hauing receiuid your louing token, which notwithstanding I allwaies doutid was ſum other mans that bore me gud will) I was mindid truly to ſpeake with you ſ laſt euening, had there not bene ſutch blocks in ſ way that I could not poſſibely do as I was mindid. I beſeech you, good Milord, pardon me: truly if I would neuer ſo faine, I could not at that time, as it fill owte, haue ſpoken with you. And yit, alas, what is in me, pore wench, that Milord A. S. ſhould deſier to ſpeake with me? The thing you wot of, Milord, were a great trespas towards God, a great offens to the world, a great greif to mie friends, a great ſhame to mieſelf, and, as I thinke, a great diſhonor to your lordſhip. I haue hard mie father ſaie, Virginitie is ſ fairiſt flower in a



maides gardin, and chafitie ⁊ ritchift dowrie a pore wench can haue.

Thefe things, Milord, and futch other make me aferde to yeeld to your request ; though truly I am verie forie your lordfhips request is futch that I may not fafely yeeld vnto it. I befeech you, good Milord, haue me excufid, though I make ftraung with youer lordfhip in fo daungerous a matter. Thus, hoping your good lordfhip will take all in as gud part as it is ment on mie part, I take mie leaue moft lowly and humbly of you.

Your lordfhips anie way els at commaunde,

PORE M.

I pray, Milord, rent this paper alltopeefts, left it chaunce by fum mishap to cum to light, and fo turne to your difhonor, which I would be loth.

To this letter Milord returnid an answer ⁊ next euening as followith.

Fearing, as P. faid, that ſhe had her ſecretarye, and defiring an answer to his letters ⁊ next daye.

THE YUNG LORDS FIRST LETTERS.

I haue receiuid your letters. I doe not anie thing miſlike of your great ſhowe of chaſtity, and yit I hope that you wil be none otherwiſe vnto me then I looke for. I did thinke it mie great goodhap that it was mi luck to make choiſe

of the aboue ſ̄y reſt, both bycauſe I knewe nature hath delt better in fashioning the then with any other here about, and alſo that being ſo giuen I might more ſafely dele with the then with many other common gallantes, by whome I might reape that frute which hardly while I liud I could recouer. I proteſt here before God, and vowe to thee, whome I loue beſt, that I was neuer of that vnconſtant minde to deceiue any woman, nether can I be of that diſſembling nature to profels great looue where I do not like.

The next day after ſaue on, ſ̄y maide anſwerid by letter in this wiſe:

Milord, if I did nether feare God, nor ſtand in awe of mie frendes, nor paſſe what report went of me, then ſutch letters, from ſutch a man, ſo louingly written, ſo full of lauiſh prommiſes and rewards, might perhaps allure me to yeeld vnto you. But God forbid, Milord, that anie perſwading words or faier prommiſſis ſhould præuaile with me in that matter, wherein I ſhould ſo greeuuſly offend ſo manie, and ſo ſhamefully caſt away mieſelf. Chafitie, they ſay, is like vnto time, which, being ons loſt, can no more be recoouerid.

Good Milord, pardon me, though I deale plainely with you. It is no ſhowe of chafitie, as your Lordſhip imagins, but chafitie indeede, that I care for. You may haue other gallants,

I know, at commaundment. I pray, mielord, spare me, and make your sute to futch as wilbe as reddie to take as you to offer.

Alas, Mielord, what talk you of crueltie on mie part in not graunting your desier, or of vnhappines on your part in not enioying your desier? Iwis, Mielord, it wilbe y best for vs both that I be thus cruell, and you thus vnhappie. And, howfoeuer it be, trully I cannot yeeld vnto you. And this is all y answer I can make to your long letters. I pray your lordship be contente.

Youres as before and no otherwise,

PORE M.

Vse this paper I pray, as you did y other. I can keepe youer counfell, though I cannot fulfill your request.

Milord replieth y next day at night on this manner.

And for his farewell sendith a small Gould ring from his owne finger.

#### THE MAIDES FAREWELL.

Milord, if youer sute were as honest as it is earnest, trully you shuld not be so reddie to make it, but I wuld be as willing to graunt it. For I cannot nowe but think youer lordship hath sum fanfie to me indeede, not only in showe, that haue so oft sente your man to me to intreate for you, loft ons a

iorny yourself in a mistie foggie euening to speake with me, and nowe last of all writt two sutch larg and louing letters, all to be spicid with sugrid words and honyfweet offers. For which tokins of gud will I cannot for manners sake but thanke you, though I dare not, for mine owne sake, yeeld vnto you. Good lord, that you shuld thus seeke after so bafe and cuntrie stuff abroad, that haue so costly and courtlie wares at home. You looue me best, you say, and præfer me in looue before any other, and esteeme me more then you esteeme yourself. Alas, Milord, howe can you ; I being so bafe and abiect in comparison of your lordshipp? You haue answerid mie thre pointes at large, but not at full. I still feare y worst. I would be loth to yeeld to you in a madnes, and euer after sorrowe to myself in good sadnes. You knowe well, Milord, the matter must needs bruff owte in y end on mie part, beit clokid neuer so lordly on your part.

And then were I, pore wench, cast vp for hawks meate, to mine owne vtter vndoinge, and mi frendes exceeding greef. And yit ar there a manie things mo to be fearid. Good Milord, wey mie case a litle better, and you will leaue of your whot sute, I doute not. And thus I take mie farewell of your lordship, after y best fashion I can for mie bringing vp, prommifing you

vnfainedlye neuer to bewraye your secrets, but to  
giue you mie gudd word wheresoeuer I becum.  
As your letters beare me in hande, I haue gudd  
caufe to doe.

Your lordships, as afore,  
Seing you will needs call me so,  
CRUELL M.

I knowe not I, what you meene by your con-  
quest, but it matterith not greatly.

Milord culd not quiet himself with this farewell,  
but fettes vpon her with a fresh reioinder, as  
followithe.

The maide being resoluid to write no more, yit  
vppon ſ receipt of so loouing a letter, thought  
good to make an ende with these fewe lines.

You knowe full well, Milord, faier words make  
fooles faine, and you weene of a like. Maides  
will refuse and take ; but I would not you should  
thinke me a chaungeling. Wary would I faine  
be: cruell can I not be ; and your Lordship is  
vnfatisfied, but not vnhappie. Vnhappie am I  
rather, that ———, but there a strawe. Tis not  
inke and paper, your man telles me, that can  
content Milord.

What, then, but put vp mie pen,  
And pray God amende you?

An that be crueltie tooe, I knowe not what  
to dooe,  
But pray God sende you.

Yours as she may,  
And not as you fay,  
Though it greeue ye.  
Yours as she can,  
And not as you scan,  
You may belecue me.

And thus I pray you stay.

PORE M.

To this letter Milord made no answer by  
writinge, but sent his man P. to deale with her,  
that he might speake a word or twoe with her  
as shortly as might be. Wherevnto with mutche  
adooe ſ̄ maide grauntid.

This was ſ̄ Thurfday before Christmas Day  
(1574), Christmas Day being vppon ſ̄ Satterday.  
And the maide appointid Sundaye to meete with  
Milord againe.

And prommisid to speake with him-vpon sutch  
a day, at sutch a neighbours house. Milord was  
there at ſ̄ day and time appointid, and sent for  
ſ̄ maide by on of ſ̄ house. The maide with-  
in les then a quarter cam, and spake with him.  
Milord stud reddie in a litle parlour in his dublet

*THE STORY OF MERCY HARVEY.*

and his hose, his points vntruff, and his shirt lying out round about him. And after a short salutation, and a twoe or thre kisses would needs haue laid y<sup>e</sup> maide on y<sup>e</sup> bedd.

The maide would none of that, but bad him fie for shame, and so by struggeling shifted as well as she might.

The good wife of y<sup>e</sup> howse, perceiuing y<sup>e</sup> winde in that dore, gat me her self owt in to y<sup>e</sup> streate at a side dore, and cam and knockid alowde at her owne dore, and tould on in y<sup>e</sup> howse M. mother had sent for her in all hast.

This was M. own deuise beforehand, that if y<sup>e</sup> gentleman, that would be heere vppon futch a night to speake with her, should stay her neuer so litle, that y<sup>e</sup> woman would praesently knock at her dore, and say she was sent for.

M. hearing y<sup>e</sup> knocking, saied she was suer it was for her, and therefore tould him she must needs begon praesently.

Wherevppon mi yung lord fill to swearing, and praied M. very instantly to yeeld vnto him.

M. made hast awaye, and saied she durst not tarry any longer.

Heare was good M., good M., and a great deale more. God confounde me, God confounde me, if thowe wantes, while I haue, &c.

Milord, seeing it would not be that time, desirid

her that she would appoint sum other day, when he might talk longer with her, and haue his request, protesting vnto her that he would be true vnto her, and vse her as his wife, and haue to dooe with no other, but only her and his wife. And swearing that she should haue any thing he had at commaundment, and vse him as familiarly and bowldly at any time as her owne brother ; with a many futch goodly supplicamuffis ; besides that he put his hand into his pockit, and pullid owt at a venture futch moony, as ether he had put there for ŷ nonse or as cam next to hande, which he would needs make ŷ maide singlar whether she would or noe. The maide tould him she had deseruid no futch giftes at his hands, nor none would take ; she had, she thankid God, enough to serue her tarne, and needid to take none in that fort, and so would needs begon.

Milord swore she should not choose but take it. (It was iust 13s. in testers and shillings.) The maide seeing him so earnest, and being verie desirous to be gon, tooke ŷ monye, and at ŷ lenght, with much adoee (only, as she saied, to be rid of him at that time), prommised to meete with him there againe on Sunday next, which was ŷ next day to Christmas. This Sunday was a maruelous wet day, and suddainly there arose great waters, by reason of ŷ raine and snowe, that fill together.



Notwithstandinge, ſhe maide purpofely tooke a iorny a feuen miles of, in ſhe morning before fix a clocke, dreading ſhe wurft if mie lord ſhould chaunce to cum. The raine continued ſhe whole day, and yet P. in ſhe euening cam to ſhe place appointid (he was fajnt to cum on pattins, bycaufe of ſhe great wett), thinking verely to haue ſhe maide there. It was tould him the maide was gon to a frendes of hers this Chriftnas, to make merrie. But they thought ſhe would be here again by Neweyeaes time. And this was all ſhe newes P. had to his mafter.

The Thurſday before Neweyeaes day (being on ſhe Satterday), the maide, by counfell of on ſhe truſtid well, excufid herſelf on this wiſe to Milord :—

Milord I thanke you hartely  
 For your late liberalitie ;  
 I would I were hable to requite  
 Your lordſhips bowntie with ſhe like.  
 Marry, mie hart is not ſo franke  
 But mie habilitie is as ſcante ;  
 Therefore, in ſteade of a leifer gift,  
 I bequeath you this paper for a ſhift.  
 You ſe I am diſpoſid to rime,  
 Though it be cleen out of time.  
 I hope your L. will haue me excufid  
 As longe as you feel not yourſelf abufid.

To be short, Milord, thus it is, Iwis,  
I could not be at home according to prommis.  
I would not, perhaps it may to you seem ;  
I pray you, Milord, do not so misdeem.  
Truly I was sent for to spend this good time  
A few miles of with a kinsman of mine.  
Whether mi father in haft wuld so faine haue  
me goe,  
That I could not nor durst not for mielife fay  
noe.

So that I was faint  
At his commaundment  
To take a iorneye  
That I litle ment.  
I pray you, Milord,  
Haue me excusid,  
Though by mie frends  
I be thus rulid.

The truth is, I am not mine owne maide,  
My frends to disobey I am afraide.  
An other time as good  
To speake your minde ;  
In ſ̄ meane time if you seeke  
You can not but finde.  
Your honors to commaund  
In anie honeft demaund.

M.

Milord, if you will any thing with me, ether concerning your letters (for your man telles me you looke for them againe), or concerning mie breaking prommis with you, or your next speaking with me, or anie thing els that shall seem good to your L., you may safely, I warrant you, write your minde, and fend your letters by P. to ſ pore womans you wot of, to be broute me on Friday next in ſ morning by on that cannot reade himſelf, and that I will charg to bring me in his purſe ſutch a letter that I had forgott in ſutch a place ; which to be fuer I will ſay I wrote to be ſent mie brother of Cambridg concerning his cumming downe into ſ cuntrie, the day before he cam downe of his owne accord vnſentfor.

And therefore I take it not amis, Milord, you ſeale your letter, and write thus in ſ backſide, in a ſmall raggid ſecretary hand,—

To mie louing brother, Mr. G. H., on of ſ fellowes of Pembrook hall, in Cambridg. As I vſe to write to mie brother there, when I write vnto him, that if ſ ſimple fellowe chaunce to offer me ſ letter before cumpany, I may ſay it was a letter I had writt to be ſent my brother Gabriell at ſutch time as he cam home to mie fathers, and ſo kept it ſtill, and by chaunce left it in ſutch a place, and therefore ſent nowe for it, being loth it ſhould cum in any others hands. Thus,

Milord, in mie foolish fanſie you may write moſt ſafely, an you be diſpoſid to write. Marry, I pray do as it ſhall ſeeme beſt to your L. If you write I will anſwer you ether by pen or tunge, as ſhortly as may be.

Thus ons againe I take mie leaue of your L., hauing no other new yeares gift, but this fillie ſheete of paper to beſtowe vppon you. And ſo I wiſh you many a good newe yeare.

Which letter mielord anſwerid præſently vppon ſ̄ deliuerie thereof, ſo that ſ̄ bearer was deſirid to tarry awhile and take an anſwer with him, which he did.

The anſwer was ſuperſcribid thus, in a ſmall counterfet ſecretary,—

To my louing brother,  
M<sup>r</sup>. Gabriell Haruey,  
Fellowe of Pembrook  
Hall in Cambridg.

And ſ̄ letter itſelf was as followith.

The letter was mett withall by ſ̄ waye, where- vppon this letter was addreſſid to Milord :—

Milord, it was mie hap on new yeares euen, as I was riding towards Cambridg, to ouertake by ſ̄ way a cuntrie fellowe that I had oftentimes ſeen long ſince at mie fathers here in Walden. The plain fellowe amongſt amanie other goodly matters tould me he had a letter in his pocket, that ſhould

ons haue bene fent me to Cambridg, but that I cam home to miefathers that verie time it should haue bene fent me. I pray the, said I, from whome? I warrant you, fyr, quoth ſ̄ fellowe, from on that loouith you full well, your ſiſter Marcie. And her letters, said I, ar ſumwhat daintie, they cum ſo fildom. But I prythe lett me ſee ſ̄ letter, for, being written to me, as thou ſaiſt it was, there can be nothing in it that I may not knowe of. Indede, fyr, quoth he, who ſhould ſee it, if you might not ſee it? But by ſ̄ Marie-god I was ſtraitly chargid by mie yung miſtres, that noboddie, in anie caſe, ſhould ſee it. Whie, foole, said I, I am nobodie, thouh I ſee it, thou maiſt ſay, and vowe too, if need be, nobodie hath ſeen it. You ſchollars be merrie gentlemen, quoth ſ̄ fellowe; but ſeing you will needs ſee it, you ſhall ſee it indeed for me, a Gods name, and with that he put his hand in his purſe, and gaue me ſ̄ letter to peruſe. I ſa[w]e it ſuperſcribid to me jndeed, and therefore made nothing daintie at ſ̄ matter, but broke it vp. At ſ̄ verie greating, to tell you ſ̄ troth, Milord, I was ſumdealeabaſhid, but more aſtonied at ſ̄ proceſſe, and finally, moſt of all, moouid at ſ̄ ſubſcription. The greating was, Mine owne ſweet Mercy, as if it had bene addreſſid to mie ſiſter from ſum loouer of hers, and not ſcribid from mie ſiſter to a brother of

hers. The proceffe, a verie amorous and glofing discour touching her suddain departure, her speedie return, ſ want of her præfens, ſ pleasure taken in reading her letters, ſ poffeffion of her according to prommis, with a menie goodlie faier words of allurement and perfuafion to that effect. The fubfcription was in your lordfhips owne name, as I remember me, thus,—

Thine more then his owne,

PHIL.

Meethouht, Milord, this was wunderfull ftraung geare, and full mutch adooe had I (God wot) to diffemble mie suddain fanfies, and comprimitt mie inward paffions. Notwithftanding I fett as good a countenance on ſ matter as I miht. And I prey the, what haue we here befide (an God will) in this prettie paper? ſaid I to ſ fellowe. Marry, fyr, I wud it were an ould angell for me, quoth he. Na then, for me, ſaid I; but I feare me, when all is dun, it will rather prooue fum crackd grote in ſ opening; take it thou for a tefter at all auenture. Not fo, Mafter, quoth he, Ile none of ſ pig in ſ poke, I thanke you. Well, then, Ile vnpoke ſ pig for this ons ſaid I; and before ſ fellowe, contrarie to mi expection, found there a Gods name a faier Ingliſh crowne, appointid as ſhould appear for a neweyeaes gift. The pore

fellowe lauhid out, and askid me what I had gottin, if I had gon thorouh with him aforehand. I tould him I should haue bene faint to haue made sum backreckning with him again. And so, to be short, I bore the fillie fellow in hand I would ease him of that burdin, both y letter and token too, being sent to me as they were. Na, by y Mariogod, fyr, quoth he, I would not for y best coate to mie back you shuld ferue me so. Your sifter, I dare sweare, wuld trust me y wurs as long as she should knowe me. I pray ye nowe giue me them again, and if it be in her mind you shall haue them, you may better haue them at her hands then at mine. Thou saist troth indeed, quoth I, and seeing thou wilt needs purse them vp again, take them here with the for me, and mutchie god-ditch her good hart with them. But I prey the haue me commendid to her, and tell her, I am a storer of hers for a twoe or thre crackd grotes and bowd tefterns, but y deuill a crowne of gould of hers I could singlar before, and now an God will must I part with it tooe. And for a token, will her in my name to looke ere she leape. She maie pick out y Inglissh of it herself.

And this be all, God be wye, M. Haruey, said y pore honest fellowe, I shall do your commaundiment, an God will within this fewe howers.

Thus it was mie hap, Milord, by a meere

chance, to liht on futch a letter and token, sent, not from you, as I take it, but in your L. name, from I knowe not whome, to a sifter of mine. Wherevppon I was sumwhat straungly affectid on þ suddaine, musing greatly whoe this lustie suter should be, and what should be ment by þ loftie subscription within, and þ futtle superscription withoute. In so mutch that I was now fully resoluid at mie returne, which should be þ next day, to make sum arrand to mie sifter by þ way, being so little way off, and so to boulte out þ matter. The next morning, contrarie to mie ouernights forecast, it was mie ill-lucke to stumble on futch company to Walden warde, that I could not possibely cumpas mie purpose, vnles I would haue lingerid a day or twoe longer in Cambridg for þ nonse, which I could not nether conueniently do, mie busines lying as it did. So that I was faint nowe to quiet mie self, as well as I miht, and, feeing this would not fadg, to do an other. I thowht best to spur cutt and make þ more speede, that as soone as I cam at Waldin, I miht huddle vp a word or twoe to mi sifter by sum of þ markit folks. (folios 71-84).





**GLOSSARIAL-INDEX,**  
**WITH**  
**NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS,**  
**By THE EDITOR.**

#### NOTE.

In this Glossarial-Index an effort has been made to include every word used by Harvey in any way noticeable, though in frequently occurring words only selected examples and references are given. Trite classical names—persons and things—are not recorded; neither has it been deemed expedient to annotate historical-literary names that have long become commonplaces. Harvey revelled in his out-of-the-way reading of Greek and Latin authors, and it would have demanded volumes to verify and elucidate these. Commonly the name is all, so that to follow them up would really not illustrate the text. Probably some may think that my error has been in excess rather than the opposite. Taken along with Greene and Nashe and Dekker, this Glossarial-Index will be found to supply virgin materials for the history of words and phrases in our language. Their vocabularies are extremely remarkable, and must be conjoined: *e.g.*, Nashe quotes so much from Harvey and Harvey from Nashe that it is only by reference and re-reference from one to the other that their meaning will be arrived at. Be it noted that the order of the words is not strictly alphabetical, except as regards the first two letters—*e.g.*, Ba, be, bi, onward. I owe very special thanks to my good friend Dr. Brinsley Nicholson, London, for his painstaking helpfulness in reading the MS. of the present Glossarial-Index. His familiarity with earlier and later English literature has greatly enriched it.

A. B. G.

GLOSSARIAL-INDEX,  
WITH  
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

A.

*A per se* A, i. 84, 202 ; ii. 317. This was the mode (as is said) of declaring A or the other vowels to be a separate syllable ; or in naming the capital letters of the alphabet in the Chriss-cross row of the Horn-book. The earliest use of the phrase is in Chaucer, who describes Cresseide as " the flowre and *a per se* of Troie and Grece " = by herself, or pre-eminent loveliness. See Nares, *s.v.*, for various examples. Shakespeare illustrates it (*Troilus and Cress.* i. 2) :

" They say he is *a* very man *per se*,  
And stands alone."

A, to the Arches, ii. 208—probably only an absurd jocosity answering to that which follows of not knowing B from Battledore ; but it is to be noted that there was a prison belonging to the Court of Arches.

Abate, an ace, ii. 63—primary meaning was 'take somewhat off from,' here = cast me down or take down my conceit.

- Abstemio, the Italian, i. 21.
- Abhominable = abominable, ii. 65, 111. Shakespeare plays on the erroneous pedantry that derived the word from *ab homine* instead of from *abominor*: "This is *abhominable* which he would call *abominable*" (*Love's Labour's Lost*, v. 1). See Nares, *s.v.*, and Glossarial-Index to our Dekker in the *Huth Library*, *s.v.*
- Abominably = abominably, i. 73, 190, 192; iii. 37.
- Abominationally, ii. 276.
- Abroche, i. 243 = set a-flowing.
- Subjects, ii. 33 = degraded, contemptible persons: "Yea, the very *subjects* came against me un-awares" (Psalm xxxv. 15, Book of Common Prayer).
- Abjectest, ii. 292 = most despicable.
- Abjected, ii. 159 = cast down.
- Abjecteth, ii. 267 = casteth down.
- Absurd, ii. 101.
- Absurdifying, ii. 276 = ridiculing or making ridiculous.
- Absolon, Master, ii. 128.
- Absonism, ii. 275—from *absonus*—probably = discord. But see Nashe's Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*
- Accloyed, i. 169, 222, 269; ii. 218, 268—compound of 'ad' and 'cloyed.'
- Acquitteth, i. 172 = requiteth. "The palme or cypress should his paines *acquite*" (Carew's *Tasso*, in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*).
- Acheerith, i. 212—Harvey here uses an 'a' or 'make' form = makes cheer [to], or uses the 'a' as = 'ad.'

- Accrew, i. 222 = join myself to—still used as ‘accrue.’  
 Accord, i. 247, 293 = agree to, be in harmony.  
 Achates, ii. 284 = the agate, under which was included bloodstone, etc. A curious use of this word is found as = staunch friend, in the memorial-stone to Sir John de Græme in Falkirk parish churchyard, where he is described as Wallace’s ‘Achates.’  
 Accleere, ii. 289, 324 = clear. See under ‘Acheerith.’  
 Actor, dog excellent, iii. 56-7.  
 Adresse = redress? i. 185 : or address myself to?  
 Addressid her, iii. 81.  
 Adamant, clawe of, ii. 236 = sharp cutting edge of a diamond—such as in the glazier’s well-known tool.  
 Addoulce, i. 247 = make sweet.  
 Addread, i. 251, 295 = make dread for.  
 Aduizement = advice, i. 6, 39.  
 Aduertizement, i. 75 = notice.  
 Adulterate, i. 261 = adulterated, corrupted; or it might be used adjectivally.  
 Adiaphorall, ii. 157 = unimportant (*αδιαφορος*).  
 Adling, gabbing (Chaucer), ii. 311 (see context).  
 Adiectiue, iii. 25.  
 Aeger = eager, or perhaps ‘sour,’ ii. 112, 189, 284.  
 Aërius = Arius, ii. 155, 157.  
 Aegle = eagle, ii. 251, 252.  
 Aferde = afraid, iii. 82.  
 Affect, i. 173, 179, 248 ; ii. 14, 176 = set affection on, like.  
 Affectionate, i. 43 = passionate. See context, and specially ll. 14-15.

- After-claps, iii. 18 = after-strokes or ill consequences  
—hence a certain disease is called a 'clap.'
- Agarick, i. 260 = a purger, and, as it somewhat brings  
on vomiting, it is corrected by adding ginger  
(J. Parkinson).
- Agast = aghast, i. 41.
- Agrippa, i. 127.
- Agogg, ii. 92, 131.
- Aihme = ah me ! i. 238.
- Aier, M., ii. 209.
- Allin ringe, i. 43—seemingly error for 'All in,' the  
common phrase for such ringing.
- Alchimists, ii. 251.
- Alchimisticall, ii. 207.
- Allgates, i. 44 = by all means.
- Ale-crammed, nose, i. 201 = red and swollen from  
drink.
- Ale-house dagger, i. 241—daggers so called because  
they were used on the slightest provocation by  
cutting huff-snuffes in alehouses. Cf. *Romeo and  
Juliet*, III., i., l. 5, etc.
- Ale-house index, iii. 29 = index or commonplace  
book of gathered alehouse terms.
- Alciat, i. 241.
- Alltopeesis = all to pieces, iii. 82.
- Allectiue—from *allicio*, *allectus* = alluring, enticing—  
i. 249 ; ii. 319.
- All well, etc., i. 294.
- All-onely, ii. 49 = the only one of all, the chief and  
therefore above the rest.
- All-to-be-assed, ii. 80 = the all (or thoroughly) to be  
considered an ass—*qy.* Laurentius Valla ?

- All to be spiced, iii. 85 = altogether, entirely.  
 Allocer, Duke, ii. 92.  
 Alcoran, ii. 148 = the Koran, or Quhoran.  
 Aliably = to be allied or related to, ii. 147.  
 Alphes rabi, ii. 170.  
 All-hart, ii. 195 = great-hearted?  
 Allusions, iii. 36.  
 Alas, iii. 48, 63 = an interjection not, as now, necessarily sorrowful or lamenting.  
 Alce, iii. 54—a fabulous and over-great deer, said to have had no joints in his legs; otherwise, says Batman, “the Aethiopian bull or the right elk” (b. 17, addition to c. 6). He would identify it with the “chamois” of Auth. Version (Deuteronomy xiv. 5).  
 Amountes, i. 119, 165, 217, 218, 227; ii. 7, 62, 153, 197, 257 = mounts—the prefix ‘a’ to be noted here, as elsewhere, by the Shakespeare student.  
 Amplifieng, i. 200.  
 Ambidexteritic, ii. 172, 199 = versatility. So in *Tristram Shandy*, iii. 23, “Without any of that speculative subtilty or *ambidexterity* of argument.”  
 Amphitryos, two, ii. 250. Zeus, having assumed the form of the absent Amphitryon, Alcmene bore to him Heracles. Plautus dramatised this in the *Menæchmi*. *En passant*, Mendechni, ii. 250, is an error for Menæchmi.  
 Angeles, red-headed, i. 69, 184—‘angels’ were gold coins so called, and ‘gold’ is always described as ‘red’ (‘red monie’ of the ballads); which is to be kept in mind when applied to hair, *e.g.*,



Queen Elizabeth's, a lock of which preserved since Sidney at Wilton, is to-day sparkling and golden—exquisite hair. In iii. 95 the mention of 'ould angels' before, and more especially its use here, seems to imply that the old angel was of greater value than the new one: but query was it so?

Angel, white, i. 268—angels usually so conceived from Holy Scripture narratives. See Daniel vii. 9, 2 Chronicles v. 12, and the narratives of the Resurrection, etc.

Angelica, i. 285 = a medicinal plant. See Gerard, p. 147, as quoted by Nares, *s.v.*—a supposed cure for Plague.

Angelical, ii. 119.

Andrewes, Bp., ii. 15, 292—a fellow-student with Spenser and Harvey at Cambridge.

Antonio, Don, ii. 15.

Antoninus, Marcus, ii. 58.

Analogy, ii. 140.

Analogicall, iii. 7.

Anarchie, ii. 159.

Anoke, John, a-Stile, ii. 126—usually John a Nokes or John-a-Noakes. See Nares, *s.v.*, for curious illustrations from John Taylor and Copley.

Antick, ii. 221.

Apishe, i. 168.

Ape, i. 189 = imitator.

Apes clogg, ii. 132, 224—from the second use 'ape' seems to mean one who mows and mouths at the passers by = a puny or vile satirist. The 'clogg' may mean, one who so sticks to the

press as to 'clog' it or prevent its use by more worthy persons.

Ape-dubbers, i. 234 = nick-namers.

Appeach, i. 251 ; ii. 270 = impeach, accuse.

Appeachment, ii. 192. See 'Appeach.'

Apis, M. Lapis, ii. 322—Christopher *Beeston* was a player and afterwards a master of a Company of Boy-players. His brother William was a man of some authority on matters of poetry. See *Collier's History of the Stage*, vol. ii., p. 81, note.

Apistie, ii. 311 (*απιστος*) = want of belief—Harvey's manufactured variant for incredulity. What Dion he meant the Editor can't tell.

Apologies = defences, ii. 6.

Apuleius, yong, ii. 39, 52, 119 = Thomas Nashe.—Apuleius in his best known work "The Golden Ass" was a satirist, and so might well be used by Harvey to discredit his antagonist, especially as 'ass' is his favourite term for him, as a pun on 'Nashe' and 'Ass.'

Apollo, Orus, ii. 57 = *Ἥλιος* or Horus; the Egyptian sun-god was identified by the Greeks and Romans with Apollo, and as such worshipped by many.

Apostataes, ii. 168, 184—the transition-form of 'apostate.' See Herrick's Works, by Dr. Grosart, ii. 15, Nicholson's *Acolastus* (1600), and Dyce's *Shirley*, p. 146. Also consult Nares, *s.v.*

Apron, short, ii. 187, 220—artizans wearing these in opposition to the long-gowned lawyers, etc. In the second reference it is the '*hangman's* apron.'

- Applably = applicably, ii. 202, 298.  
 Appliant, ii. 267.  
 Apothegs = apothegms, ii. 262, 309.  
 Apprentishood, ii. 277.  
 Aquafortis, i. 214, 216, 281; ii. 228, 232 *et freq.*—  
 Nashe's words are "tearmes . . . laid in steepe  
 in *aqua fortis* and gunpowder" = nitric acid.  
 Arithmetericians, i. 124—a pedantically foolish change  
 formed from *αριθμητος*.  
 Aretino, i. 125, 201, 272; ii. 54, 55, 272, *et freq.*  
 Aristippi, i. 136 = lovers of pleasure, as that was the  
 character given to the philosopher Aristippus and  
 his son.  
 Arch-athiest, i. 190.  
 „ deserved, i. 190.  
 „ woonderments, ii. 67.  
 „ expectation, ii. 67.  
 „ asses, ii. 260.  
 „ excellent, ii. 284.  
 „ patrons, ii. 287.  
 „ deserve, ii. 299.  
 „ mistery, ii. 63. \*.\* It is to be noted that Harvey  
 was fond of the prefix 'arch.'  
 Arcadia, i. 191.  
 „ Greene's, ii. 254.  
 Areopage, ii. 186 = Areopagus.  
 Artique, high Pole, i. 201.  
 Artificiality, i. 218; ii. 118, 278 = art making, or  
 making by rules of art.  
 Artificially, i. 208; ii. 19, 247, 258, 275, 276.  
 Arreared, i. 212, 217, 290; ii. 117, 285 = properly  
 made to rear or raise up; but sometimes passing

rather—as words in ‘a’ are apt to do—into the simple sense of reared or raised up.

Arrand, iii. 97.

Arrant, i. 242, 249 = errant, wandering. But as Halliwell-Phillipps thinks, both words convey a sense of something objectionable or worthless, from the character of ‘errands’ and ‘errants’ generally.

Arrantest, ii. 39.

Articles of Accorde, i. 259 = of agreement.

Articles, ii. 111.

Ariosto, English, i. 266. Who?

Arte Notory, ii. 64—the form of ‘P. Penniless,’ a supplication or letter to the Devil, seems to suggest that this term was = the art of writing a note which shall equal that of ‘P. Super.’

Armada, ii. 96.

Argonauticall, ii. 105.

Arread, ii. 116—Harvey uses ‘read’ twice previously in same page, and this word is used to mean either make to read or *read to*, the ‘a’ and the ‘ad’ prefixes being, as before, apparently confused.

Aristocracy, ii. 153. Milton so spelled, and nearer the Greek *αριστοκρατια*.

Armour of Prooffe, ii. 157—usually equal armour, proof against weapons; and hence Harvey characteristically uses it in his punning fashion as = the defence composed of proofs.

Artisan gouvernements, ii. 194—Harvey the plebeian had serene contempt for the ‘common people.’

Armin, Robert, ii. 280, 281. See his collected writings in Dr. Grosart’s *Occasional Issues*.

- Architectures, ii. 70.
- Ascham, i. 22, 23, 73, 100, 103, 241, 266; ii. 30, 57.  
*f.* 211, 216—the renowned 'Scholmaster.'
- Ass, i. 231; ii. 247, 249, 250, 251, 253, 254, 256.
- Ass in mouth, ii. 40—the whole paragraph is clearly  
 ironical; and this is one of Harvey's happy-  
 thoughts; and frequent equivokes on *an ass*  
 and Nashe, on the principle of a muscle, etc.
- Asseth, ii. 107 = maketh out an ass.
- Assessing, i. 135—another egregious pun not = im-  
 posing a tax, albeit the latter yields an excellent  
 meaning.
- Assesied, ii. 52.
- Astrologically, discourse, i. 199.
- Assure, ii. 12, 152 = make themselves secure. So  
 Samuel Daniel (*Civil Wars*, iv. 9)—  
 "And so hath Henrie assur'd that side."
- Aspen = trembling, ii. 17.
- Asteley, John, ii. 99. Sir John Astley (or Ashley)  
 was made Master of the Revels. Query at  
 ii. 266, Achelly? Doubtful.
- Ascertained, i. 294; ii. 234—Harvey uses 'are . . .  
 of' instead of our 'have,' but the phrase agrees  
 with its etymology—you that are not made  
 certain of. 'I dare ascertaine you' would be a  
 jocular pun; also used = make or made certain,  
*i.e.*, as stronger than our use of ascertain.
- Assery, ii. 245.
- Astrophill = Sidney, ii. 254.
- Aship, ii. 262.
- Attone, ii. 13 = make one. See 'Attonement.'
- Attonement, i. 248, 285; ii. 327.

- Ataxie, ii. 159 (*αραξια*) = want of discipline, confusion.  
 At-first, at-last, ii. 247.  
 Attend, ii. 318 = wait on, or about to be.  
 Autentique, autenticall, autentically, i. 22, 62, 77, 85,  
 133, 195.  
 Austria, i. 264.  
 Autors, authore, i. 157, 161, 189, 199; ii. 134.  
 Autem, i. 281—a would-be jocular pun = but, there-  
 fore taken as butt, the butt of his nose. See  
 context.  
 Authority, ii. 10.  
 Auayllablest, ii. 107.  
 Audry, S., ii. 235.  
 Awatering, ii. 13.  
 Awke, ii. 63, 221—Prompt. Parv. gives “*Awke* or  
 angry. *Contrarius, bilosus, perversus. Auke*  
 or wrong. *Sinister.*” It would seem to have  
 meant originally left-handed. Here = awkward  
 or perverse.

B.

- B to a battledore, ii. 208. “Battledoor was properly  
 the name for a horn-book from which children  
 learnt the alphabet” (Halliwell-Phillipps and  
 Wright’s Nares, *s.v.*)  
 Babilonian, i. 290.  
 Babingtons, i. 193.  
 Babies, i. 205, 225, 283; ii. 7 = dolls, trifles.  
 Bacchanal, ii. 271.  
 Bace = base, iii. 31.  
 Bachelers hood, i. 200.  
 Bacon, Sir Nicholas, i. 246.

- Back-friends, ii. 210, 314 = an apparent friend, though really an enemy. Minsheu gives it, *s.v.*, 'inimico' as a synonym without such distinction.
- Back-church, ii. 210.
- Backreckning, iii. 96.
- Baddest, ii. 109, 293—an obsolete superlative worth revival.
- Bag-pudding, ii. 116 = a roly-poly pudding, or magnified sausage, which was boiled in a (linen) bag. See Nares, *s.v.*, for full note and quaint examples, earlier and later.
- Bagpipe, ii. 254—context shows that it was = dulcimer.
- Baggage, ii. 273—probably worthless.
- Baityng, i. 26.
- Baker, Mat, ii. 289.
- Balductum . . . ballet [ballad], i. 62, 75; ii. 221—Balducta is a mediæval Latin word, meaning buttermilk, but 'balductum' was used apparently in a burlesque sense for a paltry affected writer, and also for his compositions. See Nares, *s.v.*, as above.
- Bald, i. 190; balde, i. 67—in the latter 'bald' may be, as Cath. Angl. gives it = *audax* [over-bold], but the former shows that it is a metaphorical use of 'bald,' *calvus*, in the sense of 'wanting or poor,' much as we speak of a 'bald version or translation' as against a free or idiomatic one.
- Ball, cuttinge, i. 169 = swaggering or ruffling, like either a gallant or a swashbuckler. Nares says also that the term 'cutter' was applied to a cut-purse; sister (Ball), *ibid.*

- Ball, game of, iii. 60.  
 Ballats, i. 201 ; ballet-makers, iii. 67.  
 Balke, ii. 175 = mound or ridge.  
 Band, i. 248 = bond.  
 Bancroft, ii. 49, 216.  
 Banging, ii. 276 = knocking with blows.  
 Bankrout, ii. 283 = bankrupt—"Time is a very *bankrout*" (*Comedy of Errors* iv. 2).  
 Bankes horse, iii. 52—see a full account by Rimbault in his Percy Society reprint of *Maroccus Extaticus*, wherein will be found notes of many writers who mention Bankes and his horse. Raleigh even introduced them into his *History of the World*. Cf. Nares, *s.v.*  
 Barbers, iii. 17 onward ; barber-chirurgeons—in a humble way 'barbers' were surgeons, tooth-drawers, blood-letters mainly, unless (1540) qualified as barber-surgeons. The two were not disconnected till 1745.  
 Barnewell, ii. 302.  
 Barratours, ii. 163, 164, 191 = wrangling, contentious, troublesome fellows.  
 Barnes, Barnabe, ii. 5—his Poems were first collected in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*, 2 vols. 4to.  
 Bartholomewe fair, i. 113.  
 Barthol, i. 208.  
 Bartas, Du, i. 266 ; ii. 21, 101, 103—Sylvester's chief work is a paraphrase-translation of this once eminent French poet. See his complete Works in *Chertsey Worthies Library*, 2 vols. 4to.  
 Barrel (verb), iii. 29.  
 Barrainer, ii. 14—obsolete comparative.



- Barrow, Henry, ii. 133, 146, 167, 170, 176, 294—see life of him in Leslie Stephen's *National Biography*, *s.n.*
- Baro, Dr. Peter, ii. 83.
- Baskeruile, ii. 15.
- Bassa = bashaw—*i.e.* pacha or pasha, i. 295.
- Bawdery, ii. 251.
- Bawe-wawe = bow-wow (as a dog), ii. 273.
- Bayarde = brown or bay horse, i. 67, 161; ii. 82, 237, 311—the epithet 'blind' so constantly used by authors, shows that allusion was intended to some particular horse so called, what or whose seems unknown.
- Bocum, iii. 86.
- Betake, i. 33, 120 = commend—*i.e.* deliver or commit (you) to.
- Behappened, i. 42 = happened. Cf. prefix 'be' with 'a.'
- Beetleheaded = wooden or stupid, 'beetle' being the rammer, mallet, etc., so called.
- Beck, i. 84 = bend in salutation. Cf. *Timon of Athens*, "Serving of *becks* and jutting out of bums" (i. 2).
- Beamy, i. 243 = beaming.
- Bearnes = bairns—*i.e.* children, i. 87.
- Behoovefull, i. 130 = necessary, useful, fit.
- Beholdingnesse, ii. 294, "Upbraids our fortunes with *beholdingnesse*" (Marston's *Malcontent*).
- Beholdinge, i. 215; ii. 6, 188, 220; iii. 44 = obliged or indebted—*i.e.*, held under obligation.
- Beshrowe, i. 113 = wish ill to, curse (in a modified sense)—because the bite of the shrew (mouse) was considered venomous.

- Bestead, i. 222 = circumstanced.  
 Bellwether, Blacke, i. 223 ; ii. 273 = leader (of the flock).  
 Bee, i. 259 ; ii. 233.  
 Beaudesert, i. 290 ; ii. 264, 321 = good desert.  
 Beuis, Syr, ii. 18, 225.  
 Bell, geeue the, ii. 51.  
 Beshrewe, ii. 56. See under ' Beshrowe.'  
 Beclaweth, ii. 80 = flattereth. To 'claw' or scratch or tickle, and hence 'flatter.'  
 Berlady, ii. 89 = by our Lady, *i.e.* Virgin Mary.  
 Beluedere, ii. 193 (Ital.) = an elevated place (or house or garden) whence one obtains a good view.  
 Belly-biters, ii. 210—a vile meaning.  
 Benet and Collect, ii. 322—by. grace or blessing? Du Cange has Benitus = *benedictus* : Fr. *beni*[t].  
 Bewaileful, i. 195 = full of bewailing or lamentation.  
 Bewitched, iii. 13 = so drew me admiringly, or the like.  
 Beare, iii. 21.  
 Beard, Nashe none, iii. 38.  
 Beggar-stuff, ii. 61.  
 Beuer = beaver, iii. 40.  
 Bibiena, Cardinal, i. 125.  
 Bilchaunger, George, i. 79.  
 Bird, Christopher, i. 160, 176, 238 ; ii. 74, 83.  
 Bisonian, i. 208 (Italian) = a needy fellow, and hence a knave or scoundrel.  
 Bizzaro, ii. 99.  
 Bishopgate, ii. 198.  
 Bishops, superintendents, ii. 155.

- Biggin, ii. 220 = house or residence, as *Scoticè*. Or query = covering (or close cap), a child's or lawyer's cap? See *Nares, s.v.*
- Bibber, ii. 238.
- Bibbing, ii. 273.
- Bibble babble, iii. 30 = nonsensical talk.
- Blabbe, ii. 228.
- Black prince, i. 216 = the Devil.
- Blacke swanne, i. 220—common enough now that Australia has been opened.
- Blacke art, i. 244 = necromancy usually.
- Blackamore, ii. 127—a 'negro' was originally understood by the English black-a-more, but it must be noted that the 'negro' and 'Moor' were distinct, and so held in Elizabethan times: *e.g.*, when the races of men were represented in a Show, there appeared the 'Black Man' and also the 'Moor' [brown].
- Blason, i. 267, ii. 6 = paint out in true colours (heraldic technical).
- Blustrous, ii. 17.
- Blundeuil, Thomas, ii. 99.
- Blithely, ii. 113.
- Bladude, ii. 117—seemingly some personage of a romance. Query—did not Swift use it as a town's name?
- Blase, S. = S. Blaise, ii. 235.
- Blindfolded petie god, i. 81. See page 36.
- Blurt, ii. 273.
- Bloudes, ii. 339.
- Blue = blew, iii. 77.
- Bonets, i. 82.

- Booke-case, ii. 36.  
 Books, Italian and other, i. 137 ; at Cambridge, i. 137-8.  
 Bookishe, i. 147.  
 Bodie, of God, iii. 78 = by the Mass? (as p. 79).  
 Bodin, i. 146, 252 ; ii. 23, 24, 84.  
 Botcher, i. 190 = bungler, not 'butcher.'  
 Botched up = clumsily and badly done, i. 194.  
 Bombard-goblin, ii. 17 = a goblin that bombards one with full and explosive terms. He afterwards calls him an 'elfe' and of gunpowder. There may be also allusion to his drinking propensities.  
 Bombardier, i. 205 ; ii. 41 = a thrower of terms like bombs at his enemy.  
 Bombardaccio, Sir, ii. 18.  
 Bobb, for a K, i. 282 ; dry bobbers, ii. 212, 223 = scoff, taunt, primarily a blow or stroke.  
 Bobbes, ii. 133.  
 Bonnie, i. 283.  
 Bombasted, i. 290 ; ii. 237 = stuffed out.  
 Bodley, ii. 15.  
 Bouncing, ii. 63 = jumping—so frightening?  
 Borrowghes, ii. 97.  
 Bourde, ii. 295 = jest or attack, the simile being nautical, as in *Twelfth Night* i. 3.  
 Bourdeth, ii. 107, 167—so this = jesteth.  
 Boord = dinner-time, iii. 66.  
 Boultheth out, ii. 145 = sifteth out.  
 Boulth = sift, iii. 97.  
 Bonifacius, ii. 228.  
 Bons = bones, iii. 70.

- Bordello, ii. 233 = brothel—"crept into all the stewes, all the brothell-houses and *burdelloes* of Italy" (Coryat's *Crudities*).
- Bourne, William, ii. 289.
- Bowgets = budgets, i. 50.
- British Museum, i. 2.
- Brauure, ii. 222 = bravery, splendour.
- Braueryes, i. 137; ii. 21—*ibid.*
- Brauinge, i. 168, 271 = defying.
- Breake day, ii. 60 = fail to keep his appointment.  
Cf. context.
- Breake the square, i. 157 = to break this rule or depart from my settled order: so "all squares."
- Breake-neck, i. 268 = its own gallows.
- Braine, ii. 17.
- Braggardous, ii. 17.
- Broaching, ii. 23 = piercing through so as to set a-flowing—a 'broche' is a spit.
- Brucke = brook, endure, ii. 38, 236.
- Brothers, sworne, ii. 77.
- Broccage, ii. 92, 121 = brokage or intervention as a broker.
- Browne, Robert, ii. 133, 167, 169, 176, 294—see life in Stephen's "National Biography," *s.n.*
- Brothellish, ii. 214.
- Brayeth, ii. 239.
- Broking, ii. 270.
- Brabbling, ii. 270.
- Breath, stinking, iii. 21-3—apparently, like 'stinking feet,' more common in Elizabethan times than now.
- Breeches, story of a pair of, iii. 26, 27.

- Brust = burst, i. 45; iii. 85, *et frequenter*.  
 Brute = bruit, ii. 18.  
 Buchanan, George, i. 218.  
 Bunglid, i. 112.  
 Busbye, Dr., i. 128.  
 Bugges, i. 297; ii. 18, 163, 317, 346 = bugbears. An English Bible is known as the 'bug' Bible, from a notorious use of the word in translating one of the Psalms.  
 Bugges-woordes, i. 166, 214; ii. 233 = terrifying words.  
 Buglosse, i. 294 = a plant, or some preparation of a plant, but what 'Mercury of Bugloss' was the Editor knoweth not. See Britten, *s.v.*  
 Bull-beare, i. 184, 296; ii. 17, 287—query same as 'bull-begger'? (which see), or = similar to bugbear?  
 Bull-beggar, i. 204, 281, 296; ii. 129, 323—a kind of hobgoblin. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a full Note with examples.  
 Bull-woorke = bulwark, iii. 321.  
 Bull-heade, iii. 21.  
 Bursten = burst, i. 193.  
 Buckram giants, i. 204, 205—'buckram' was a stiff material, and by this phrase Harvey probably meant giants made of buckram—*i.e.*, with nothing inside their suits—foolish scarecrows, or feigned frighteners. Hence, probably, Shakespeare, by an intentional equivoke, made Falstaff dress his opponents in buckram suits. Legally 'buckram bags' were the lowest class of attorneys.  
 Busy idlenesse, i. 213.  
 Busyheads, i. 215.

- Buttry, sprite of the, ii. 51—some variant of 'Puck.'  
Cf. 'Aiken Drum' of Scotland.
- Bunge, ii. 51, 223 = stop up, as does the 'bung' of a  
hogshead; 'bung up,' ii. 128.
- Bumbasted, ii. 61 = stuffed out.
- Budget, ii. 75, 220 = bag, or valise, etc., that held his  
odds and ends.
- Bugiale, ii. 215.
- Bumme-carde, ii. 215 = a card used by sharpers for  
cutting, but whether it was long or wide or a  
'last' card, Editor knoweth not. Query—cutting  
with view of getting particular card at 'bottom?'
- Bumm, ii. 273.
- Bumbarde, ii. 211 = a 'chamber,' or small mortar,  
also a hand-gun.
- Butter-whore, ii. 230, 231 = a butter-seller, and thence  
a scold, and possibly worse. So an 'oyster-wife'  
was also called an 'oyster-whore.' Query—  
treacherous, slippery?
- Burley, Tom, ii. 237.
- Buttons, maketh, ii. 238 = he bewrayeth himself  
(through fear). Still = sheep's dung, Devon;  
and heard now in the London streets among  
costermongers.
- Butter-milke, iii. 240.
- Buggery, ii. 244.
- Buxom, ii. 298.
- Buzzarde, i. 67.
- Bull, hangman, ii. 129; iii. 70.
- Byng, Dr., i. 63.
- By-disputation, i. 78 = aside or intercurrent disputa-  
tion.

By cause = because, i. 101, 102, *et frequenter*.  
 Bye-supposes, i. 148. See 'By-disputation.'  
 Byles = boils, iii. 52.

## C.

Cabalists, ii. 251.  
 Carper, i. 31.  
 Caueat, i. 53, 189.  
 Cambridge, Harvey's picture of, i. 69 onward.  
 Cartwright, Thomas, i. 71, 234; ii. 152, 291.  
 Casts, of legerdemaine, i. 72, 80.  
 Cast, water, i. 201; ii. 228 = examine urine.  
 Casting beyond the moon, i. 226; iii. 32 = attempt  
 impossibilities. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a full Note.  
 Canuazed = discussed, i. 78; ii. 36, 76, 130, 317.  
 Caius, Dr., i. 215.  
 Camarick = cambric, i. 84.  
 Carlil, M., i. 119.  
 Canicular, i. 165 = belonging to the dog-star, or hot.  
 Cautele, i. 191, 287; ii. 208 = caution.  
 Cautelous, i. 211, 262 = cautious.  
 Catilinaries, i. 210 = orations against Catiline.  
 Cart of Croiden = collier's cart, ii. 211.  
 Cart before the horse, ii. 225.  
 Carterly, ii. 244.  
 Carter's logic, i. 214 = abuse.  
 Cassia, i. 260.  
 Capon-crammed, i. 291.  
 Capricious, i. 290 = goatish, lustful.  
 Casualtie, ii. 8.  
 Canker, ii. 109 = cancer (metaphorically) = 'cankar,'  
 as in cancer-worm.



- Cancer-worm = canker-worm, ii. 23.
- Catboltes, ii. 41—a coinage of Harvey's, probably suggested by dog-bolt, a term of reproach.
- Castell, lad of the, ii. 44—a corrupt phrasing, originally fetched from Castilian, or Spaniard, and thence 'boaster'? "As the honey of Hybla my old lad of the castle" (1 Henry IV. i. 2) = lad of the type of 'the' Castilian?
- Careers, run the, ii. 44, 55, 80, 243, 322 = running the charge.
- Cap of maintenance, ii. 54, 243 = cap of State carried before the king and certain mayors of England on ceremonial occasions.
- Captain-scold, ii. 58 = the chief scold.
- Calepine, ii. 66—his great (Latin) Dictionary was just the book for pedantic Harvey.
- Capricians, ii. 91.
- Carowse, ii. 92 = health at drinking-bout.
- Capricio, Signor, ii. 109.
- Calvin, ii. 151 *et freq.*
- Canton, ii. 153—in Italian = corner or angle, etc., therefore the division of a county, as in Switzerland.
- Cantonish, ii. 153—query an intended quibble from Ital. *cantoniere* = deceiver, and cantonish as a secondary meaning = tricky or beguiling?
- Can-away-with, ii. 157 = agree with.
- Cap-case, ii. 228 = small travelling case, originally for holding 'caps.' See Nares, *s.v.*
- Captain comforter, ii. 243.
- Cattes panges, ii. 246—query p[h]anges = fangs? by = beside or near to.

- Caitiue, ii. 327 = mean fellow.
- Castilio, Count B., ii. 99, 271. The Editor owns Harvey's autographed and annotated copy of "The Courtier."
- Carminist, ii. 275 = poesy-maker.
- Carminicall, ii. 275.
- Caualiers, ii. 275.
- Callimunco, ii. 275—a tortoise-shell cat in Norfolk dialect is a Calimanco cat; but that does not help one. It is a Nashe term, and he neighboured Norfolk.
- Cates (also 'acates'), iii. 5 = dainties, all victuals except bread and wine.
- Capistrum, iii. 23, 24 = halter, etc.
- Cales, iii. 28 = Cadiz, *not* Calais.
- Cappes, red, iii. 28.
- Cap, cast thy, iii. 31 = aim at, or desire.
- Camel, legend of, iii. 34.
- Carbonadoed, iii. 42=[meat] broiled on the coals (from Italian).
- Captiuated, iii. 49 = taken captive.
- Cazament, and his dogs, iii. 54.
- Capparus' dog, iii. 55.
- Censure = judgment, i. 156, 162, 202, 205; ii. 14, 25; iii. 71.
- Censoriall, ii. 276.
- Centurians, ii. 143.
- Chakes = short cakes, iii. 76, *et alibi*.
- Chaucer, i. 165, 252; ii. 228, 311.
- Chaulk up, i. 71 = mark up, as drink accounts in public-houses.
- Churchyard, M., i. 126, 199; ii. 290.

- Chorcebi, i. 193.  
 Chorabus, iii. 29.  
 Cheke, Sir John, i. 241, 266 ; ii. 50, 171.  
 Chopped, i. 262 = fallen suddenly or by chance upon.  
 Chopping logic, ii. 244 = disputative logic or argumentation.  
*Christ's Teares*, by Nashe, i. 273.  
 Check, i. 275.  
 Cheerely, i. 279.  
 Chearne, i. 283 = churn.  
 Charlmaine, i. 295 = Charlemagne.  
 Chewt, Anthony, ii. 24, 25, 337-8, 341, 344-5, 346.  
 Chart, ii. 47.  
 Chiliarkes, ii. 143 = the captains or rather colonels of a thousand men.  
 Chapman, Dr., ii. 208.  
 Chapman, of choice, ii. 263.  
 Chiromancie, ii. 210 = palmistry.  
 Cherne, ii. 231 = churn.  
 Cheese-press, ii. 231.  
 Cheese-knaue, ii. 231 = servant under the dairy-maid or other.  
 Chearly, ii. 245. See 'Cheerely.'  
 Chaderton, Dr., ii. 292.  
 Chaderton, M., ii. 292.  
 Cheuerell, ii. 317 = soft kid leather, *i.e.* easily stretched or flexible. "Your *cheveril* conscience" (*Henry VIII.*, ii. 3). Cf. also *Romeo and Juliet* ii. 4, [for 'stretched'], *Twelfth Night* iii. 1 [for 'stretchable' and flexible].  
 Chettle, ii. 322.

- Chance-medley, iii. 14 = killing a person by chance, when the killer does it without evil intent, and a lawful act, though some fault may be due to the killer.
- Christen, iii. 29 = baptize.
- Channel, iii. 41 = drain.
- Cherrihinton, iii. 64.
- Chronicles, ii. 196.
- Ciuality, ii. 6.
- Circumcise, i. 203—misprinted 'cicumcise.'
- Circuiting, ii. 72.
- Cirurgion = chirurgeon, iii. 22.
- Ciphers, without 1, iii. 28 = without oo.
- Circles, in water, iii. 51.
- Clarke, Joseph, Esq., i., xi.
- Clarke, Richard, ii. 244.
- Clark, Dr. Barth., ii. 83.
- Clearly = learnedly, i. 20, 43, 61.
- Clawbackes = flatterers, i. 71 ; ii. 239.
- Claweth, ii. 107 = flattereth.
- Climing, i. 252 = ambitious.
- Clarentius, ii. 13.
- Clunged, ii. 120 = hunger-bitten : Lancashire and elsewhere 'clemmed'.
- Cloakebagge, ii. 256.
- Cleapeth = nameth, ii. 275.
- Close, man, ii. 312 = secret-keeping, selfishly ?
- Commaundement, at = ready to consent, iii. 77.
- Commoditie, i. 6, 166 ; ii. 288, 299, 314 ; iii. 30.
- Comets, and earthquakes ominous, i. 62.
- Contentation, i. 64 = contentment.
- Comedanties, i. 125 = Ital. *comediante* = stage-players.

- Controller = Dr. Perne, i. 73, 182, 183, 234. See under 'Perne.'
- Counteruaile, i. 18 = to be of equal value against, balance.
- Corculum, i. 38 (see Grosart's *Spenser's Works*, Life, i.) = diminutive of *cor* = sweet or dear heart.
- Copper-face, i. 72 = dusky-red, as the copper rose = poppy, and we have 'copper nose' (Cromwell's and others').
- Comencements, i. 79 = the times when degrees are taken at the University.
- Coye it = assume prudish airs, i. 98 ; ii. 7, 329.
- Counteruaileable, i. 106.
- Copesmates, i. 125 ; ii. 116, 131 = associates—originally in merchandise.
- Coolinge carde, i. 139. See Glossarial-Index to Greene's Works, v.
- Coram, i. 162 = before (the magistrate), *Merry Wives of Windsor* I. i. 4.
- Complot, ii. 175, 296 = plot together.
- Compromit, iii. 95 = Latin *comprimere*, to repress.
- Conny-catchers, i. 168, 189. See Greene's Works *frequenter*.
- Cooseners, i. 168, 190 = cheaters.
- Cogging, i. 168, 200 ; ii. 214, 328 = cheating with dice.
- Collier colours, ii. 217 = black. Cf. 'black artist.'
- Conuersable, i. 172.
- Cosenage, i. 189 ; ii. 262, 270 = cheating.
- Comparisons, odious, i. 192. Made immortal by Dean Donne.

- Cowe, curst, i. 192 = vicious cow.
- Cōuied, i. 194 = conveyed.
- Counter, i. 199 ; ii. 253 = prison so called.
- Coursed, i. 203 = hunted ?
- Concordance, i. 220 = agreement.
- Commination, i. 240 = a threatening—"a commination or denouncing of God's anger" (*Book of Common Prayer*).
- Condolement, i. 259.
- Counterfesance, i. 261 = a counterfeiting.
- Coheaping, i. 264 = heaping together.
- Cockereth, i. 275 ; ii. 121, 269 = indulgeth, pampereth.
- Cockes of the game, i. 277 = game cocks—used metaphorically.
- Combe, of the honey, i. 280 = the (full) honeycomb.
- Couen, i. 287 ; ii. 262, 317—a legal term—the collusive or deceitful agreement of two or more to the prejudice of a third.
- Coward-lane, i. 297.
- Counterpoise, ii. 8.
- Counter-policy, ii. 8.
- Connuence, ii. 13 ; iii. 40 = connivance.
- Cockhorse, on, ii. 18, 92 = on a fiery or spirited horse—metaphorically to stand on haughty terms, or be haughty. Cf. Cotgrave, "Cheval, estre à."
- Counterfaict, ii. 23 = counterfeit.
- Coales, bearer of, ii. 31 = submitter to every indignity—probably from mean nature of employment. Usually the form is to 'carry coals.'
- Coile, ii. 133 = bustle, or qy. hoisting gear or pulleys? Coal in Lancashire is pronounced 'coil.'

- Commotioners, ii. 43, 164 = movers together.  
 Columbus, of tearmes, ii. 45 = discoverer or inventor of.  
 Confuters, ii. 46.  
 Controuersies, endless, ii. 48 (various names).  
 Conueiance, ii. 60, 77, 262, 314. Shakespeare's use  
 of 'convey' everybody knows.  
 Coylie, ii. 63.  
 Conduction, ii. 96 = guidance.  
 Cortes, Martin, ii. 97, 282.  
 Conquerous, ii. 98 = full of conquests—a fuller and  
 more embracing word than 'conquering.'  
 Coweherd's house, ii. 69.  
 Counselling, ii. 100.  
 Colman hedge, ii. 110, 112—then a disreputable part  
 of London—a 'Coleman hedge' wench was a  
 prostitute.  
 Convince, ii. 110 = convict.  
 Cockish, ii. 116 = cock-like, vaunting or braving.  
 Collyrium, ii. 128—generally a wash (healing) for the  
 eyes; but here used apparently in Columella's  
 sense, as a medicine for horses and oxen.  
 Cocke-on-hoope, ii. 133, 158. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a  
 full Note, with examples.  
 Colourably, ii. 134 = in appearance.  
 Congruence, ii. 154 = agreement.  
 Collation, ii. 160 = the conferring or presentation.  
 Conscionable, ii. 185.  
 Cock-alilly, ii. 210, 217.  
 Concupiscence, ii. 214.  
 Conuented, ii. 193 = the party or person agreed upon  
 or brought in *con* by all or by the majority to be  
 one with them—*i.e.*, their minister. So in Scot's

“Discovery of Witchcraft,” b. i., c. 5, where he speaks of a woman being “*convented* by the civill or canon law.” The phrase is a legal one, but it shows a similar use, *one* woman being brought before *others*, the judges. See Dr. Brinsley Nicholson’s edition of Scot *in loco*.

Cowe, dun, of Dunsmore, ii. 223.

Cowe, in cage, ii. 283.

Cotqueane, ii. 230 = a masculine hussy, a scold and more.

Cole, Humphrey, ii. 289.

Cole-harbour, iii. 26—a place or *hospitium*—properly Cold Harbour (London). Cf. Nares, *s.v.*

Cole-rake, ii. 232 = a rake used for raking a fire or oven.

Comprimitt, iii. 95.

Conster, ii. 246 ; iii. 36 = construe.

Coosened, ii. 247 = cheated.

Commenters, ii. 257 = commentators or interpreters.

Corrigidore, ii. 275—Spanish *corregidor*—a corrector; also the chief justice or governor of a town, the clerk of the market, etc.

Contaminated, ii. 275.

Collops [of meat], ii. 275.

Coursest, ii. 279 = coarsest.

Coony-caught, ii. 282.

Contingents, ii. 282.

Combe-cutt, ii. 283 = the comb of a cock or cokes, a fool, being cut, *i.e.* made a craven of.

Cowll, ii. 284 = Harvey’s spelling of ‘coll,’ to embrace or clasp.

Cooper, Dr., ii. 292.



- Conscience, Ephemerides of his, ii. 301 = the Almanac of his conscience (Perne's) was a current Prognostication for the fifty years he flourished. Almanacs were then 'Prognostications,' and he means apparently that Perne varied with every variation of the political and ecclesiastical accidents or happenings of the then or coming season.
- Comically, ii. 300—use of the word as in Dante's 'Divine *Comedy*' = acting a part.
- Counterpane (verb), ii. 300—as a subst. it signifies one of a pair of deeds or indentures, the counterpart or other copy—a legal term.
- Countermotted, ii. 308 = countermottoed. See 'mott' in context.
- Cockemaster, iii. 10.
- Conuicious, iii. 19—a probable coinage by Harvey = not vicious in any single particular, but in many vices together.
- Course, by, iii. 26 = in order.
- Contex, iii. 30 = context—from 'weave together.'
- Cosmologizd, iii. 40—from *κοσμος* and *λογος*.
- Cosoned, iii. 61 = cheated.
- Coate, fool's, iii. 64-5—livery of the professional fool.
- Crissecrosse rowe, i. 129—the row of capital letters of the alphabet in the Horn-book.
- Crewe, i. 140; ii. 199—company. Used in no ill sense now except of a ship's crew.
- Crafte, gentle, i. 166 = shoemaker's—but why?
- Crosbiters, i. 168, 274; ii. 74, 229 = cheaters. 'Cross' is here used in the sense of 'not on the square'—to fight on the cross is not to fight fairly.

- Croft, Sir James, i. 182.
- Crie, out of, i. 196 = a hunting term—and as an animal beyond 'cry' is far away, it is used as here for pathetic extremely, or out of all whooping.
- Crowes, idot, i. 204 ; white, i. 288—the latter = scarce or unusual things.
- Crancke, i. 233 ; ii. 7, 59, 113, 115, 128 ; cranknesse, ii. 277, 324 ; iii. 35, 52 — brisk, lively : as subst. it means a twisting or crooked fellow, an impostor or cheat.
- Crankly, ii. 42.
- Crosstreade, ii. 39 = to tread on, as a crow treads on and picks up the ground with its claws, and so does harm and destroys.
- Crosbarres, ii. 56—this shot folds up and enters the gun (= cannon) as a solid shot, but when it leaves the muzzle takes the form of a cross-bar having at each extremity a quarter of a round shot. Cf. Admiral Smith's 'Sailors' Word-book,' *s.v.*
- Crake, ii. 70, 273, 281, 286, 308 ; iii. 46 = grumble, speak creakingly.
- Crowders, ii. 123 = fiddlers—a fiddle was called a 'crowd.'
- Cros-cloth, ii. 229 = kerchief, or cloth crossed round the head or bosom. See Nares, *s.v.*
- Crab-tree deske, ii. 237—a crab-tree cudgel was common ; hence Harvey's would-be witty figure.
- Cromwell, Lord, ii. 247.
- Crusado, ii. 289 = a Portugese coin. See Nares, *s.v.*, for full Note.
- Crinch, crintch, iii. 9, 44 = shrink, crouch.

- Crocodile, iii. 21.  
 Cronet = coronet, iii. 42.  
 Criticism, school, ii. 52.  
 Curtoll, i. 21, 139 = curtal or curtail—one docked of  
 or shortened in its tail.  
 Curious, i. 33, 176, 202, 286; ii. 43, 119, 142, 298;  
 iii. 71 = full of care, even to prying into.  
 Cunnyes = coney, i. 49; legend of, iii. 59, 60.  
 Cut, perfect, iii. 15, 16, 50, 64.  
 Cuttingly, ii. 40.  
 Cutters, ii. 42, 57, 205 = swash-bucklers, ruffians,  
 robbers, etc., as in Cowley's '*Cutter* of Coleman  
 Street.' See his complete Works in *Chertsey*  
*Worthies' Library*, 2 vols. 4to.  
 Cutting, ii. 52.  
 Currie favour, ii. 188, 298 = seek favour, fawn.  
 Cunnies, iii. 76.  
 Cunnycatch, i. 274, 295 = deceive, cheat, trick, as one  
 does a coney = a simple fellow.  
 Cunny catching, iii. 26.  
 Cuckingstoole, ii. 61, 220, 230 = ducking-stool (used  
 for witches, scolds, and worse).  
 Curate, ii. 108, 183; anecdote of, iii. 71.  
 Cuttes, draw, ii. 130, 221—thus described because the  
 paper, straw, or wood, etc., was cut into different  
 lengths.  
 Cumane asse, ii. 248.  
 Curstest, ii. 231 = ill-tempered, shrewish—superlative  
 of 'curst.'  
 Curtailed, ii. 231 = docked in the tail.  
 Cussionet, ii. 319 = little cushion.  
 Cuckow, iii. 11—a significant word o' old times.

Cue, iii. 57. See Nares, *s.v.*, for a full Note : but here  
= key?  
Cummes me, iii. 81.

D.

D's, iii. 16.  
Daintie, iii. 94 = nice, not squeamish.  
Dapper, i. 93 ; ii. 59, 128 = neat, spruce, small and  
active—still in use.  
Daniell, Samuel, i. 218 ; ii. 290.  
Dalliance, i. 291 ; ii. 156.  
Danter, Thomas, Printer, ii. 18, 42, 229, 280.  
Dandiprat, ii. 115 = dwarf, small person. See Nares,  
*s.v.*  
Daunce attendance, ii. 43.  
Dante, ii. 103.  
Dash, ii. 118 = put out of countenance, lower.  
Dash-Nash, ii. 120 = a would-be satirical coinage  
against Nashe.  
Darcy, ii. 216.  
Daggle-tailed, ii. 229, 240 = draggle-tailed, slatternly.  
Dædalist, ii. 290 = architect and sculptor.  
Deade suer, iii. 80 = absolutely sure.  
Decyphering, i. 95, 168 ; ii. 213, 326 = interpreting.  
See Greene *frequenter*.  
Devises = devices, i. 111.  
Deuiseful, i. 196 = full of devices.  
Dee, M., i. 127 ; ii. 290.  
Defend [se], i. 140.  
Deluded = deceived, iii. 80.  
Demetrius, M., i. 159 onward, 238 ; ii. 74.

- Depraueth, i. 187 ; ii. 251, 301 = corrupteth, deprecia-  
teth.
- Deprauers, ii. 94.
- De Thoemes, don Lazarello, i. 206 — error for  
'Thormes.'
- Delict, ii. 156 = Latin *dilictum*, fault, offence (primarily  
omitting to do what we ought to do).
- Demi-scholler, i. 230.
- Deuoreux, Walter, i. 246.
- Demurr, ii. 17.
- Demerit, ii. 21 = merit—from Latin: the French,  
Italian, and Spanish thus use it. So do Minsheu  
and Cocker give this sense.
- Descry, ii. 40 = point out or 'cry out.'
- Descride = pointed out, ii. 336.
- Dead fleshe, ii. 62 = figure for inactivity.
- Deale = arrange.
- Despiteous, ii. 84 = pitiful or to be pitied? or query  
—despiteful?
- Deseignementes, ii. 140 = designs.
- Decurion, ii. 143 = an officer over ten, or some say  
thirty-two men; also the councillor or chief  
officer of a provincial city.
- Democracy, ii. 153. See 'Aristocracy.'
- Deformation, ii. 153, 196 = misrule.
- Delphicall, ii. 193 = oracular.
- Deuoire, ii. 257, 320 (Fr.) = duty.
- Declamatorie, ii. 276.
- Delone, Thomas, ii. 280, 281.
- Deering, ii. 292.
- Descant, iii. 33.
- Demi-hell, prison a, iii. 48

- Dexterious, iii. 70.  
 Dia-pap -fig- nut, ii. 216—a made-up word — ‘dia’  
 was frequently joined to the chief ingredient of  
 medicinal compositions.  
 Diapason, fooles, ii. 132.  
 D’Israeli, Isaac, i., xlvii.  
 Diueling, i. 84 = a little devil (as costumed on the  
 stage, etc.)  
 Distraute, i. 112 = distraught.  
 Discommendable, i. 124.  
 Diuels Oratour, i. 156, *et freq.*  
 Dishability, i. 156 = disability.  
 Displeasure, i. 174, 213.  
 Disease, i. 196, 215, 250 = discomfort and disease.  
 Dia-margaritam or Dia-ambre, i. 267—the former  
 a restorative powder chiefly of pearl (Kersey)  
 —the latter probably a restrictive composed  
 of *ambre*, Fr. for amber, but whether our amber  
 or amber-grease (grey amber) the Editor knows  
 not.  
 Disbalased, i. 279 = unballasted, unladen.  
 Disbowell, i. 292 = disembowell.  
 Diamant and diamond, i. 295 ; ii. 94, 266, 338 = dia-  
 mond.  
 Dissolute, ii. 11, 32, 139, 220, 229—used sometimes  
 by Harvey in its present sense of ‘licentious’  
 or immoral ; but also as = dissolved, let loose.  
 Dissoluteness, ii. 82.  
 Disfauorable, ii. 14.  
 Ditty, ii. 93.  
 Digges, Thomas, ii. 99, 290.  
 Discipline, displing, ii. 176, 237.

- Disputatiue, ii. 276.  
 Dilatement, ii. 276 = delay ?  
 Discommodity, ii. 288 ; iii. 30.  
 Dismasketh, ii. 291, 312 = unmasketh.  
 Dick, desperate, ii. 328—Dick seems by several examples to have been used as a common name of no one in particular, as we use Smith, Brown, Jones and Robinson. In the text it was the more likely to have been used as being alliterative with 'desperate.'  
 Dicker, of dickes, iii. 25 = a bundle of ten of anything, hides, etc.  
 Distich, best contrived, iii. 37.  
 Dildoe, iii. 63. See Ash, etc., *s.v.*  
 Dishe clowte, i. 281.  
 Done = done with, given over, i. 8.  
 Dogging = following up (as a sporting dog the game), i. 37.  
 Dogged, i. 165—in Norfolk = ill done (Halliwell-Phillipps, *s.v.*)  
 Doctorally = learnedly, i. 44.  
 Dowty, i. 192, 193, 215 = doughty.  
 Dowteest, i. 235—superlative.  
 Doulcely, i. 240 = sweetly.  
 Doomefull, i. 254 = carrying doom.  
 Doting, ii. 8 = foolish.  
 Dooue, ii. 15, 292—Dr. Dove, Bp. of Peterborough, fellow-student of Spenser.  
 Dogge-fish, ii. 122.  
 Dogboltes, ii. 41 = a term of reproach. See Lyly's *Campaspe*, i. 2.  
 Dodipoles, ii. 63, 90, 246 = stupid, lumpish persons.

- Dodkin, ii. 73, 113, 115 = trifling fellow (after the small corn so called).
- Dodecomechanists, ii. 91—*δωδεκα μηχανη* or *μοικος* = the dodekatheos or secret and lecherous banquets of Augustus. See Suetonius, *s.n.* (Mr. W. G. Stone, Bridport).
- Doung-voiding, ii. 110.
- Dorbell, ii. 246—'dorbelish' is Lincoln for 'clumsy' (Halliwell-Phillipps, *s.v.*).
- Dor-beetle, ii. 251, 272—a beetle, from its knocking when flying at night against people or things, was supposed to be blind. From the same it seems to have been thought foolish, for as beetlehead = blockhead, so dor-beetle = foolish beetle.
- Dorre, ii. 272 = drone bee.
- Dolt, iii. 16.
- Doterell, iii. 16 = silly fellow. See curious Note in Nares, *s.v.*
- Dogs, the Ile of*—a play by Nashe, iii. 50 onward ; 54 onward ; 60 onward.
- Dog, anecdotes of, iii. 54 onward.
- Dog-daies, iii. 58.
- Drant, Thomas, i. 9, 23, 36, 76, 100 ; ii. 292.
- Dranting, ii. 131. Dr. Drant wrote rules for English prosody—hence Harvey uses it for = prosodizing or scanning of verse.
- Droute = drought, i. 128.
- Drumme, of Flushing, i. 283.
- Driblinge, ii. 49 = trifling or inefficacious. Cf. *Measure for Measure* i. 4.
- Drisle, ii. 49.
- Drawer, ii. 57 = the tapster.



- Drab, ii. 272 = slattern (and worse).  
 Drabs, he or she, ii. 231.  
 Dromedarie, ii. 233.  
 Drumme, Tom, ii. 240—famous from the drama of *Tom Drum's Entertainment*. See full and interesting Note in Nares, *s.v.* It came to be a jocular name for a fellow treated as a dunce, beaten, etc.  
 Draffe-maides, ii. 245 = maids who took out dirt or refuse (as for instance to pigs)—probably a term of contempt coined by Harvey.  
 Drad, ii. 253, 258 = dread.  
 Drake, Sir Francis, ii. 96, 97.  
 Dromidote ergonist, ii. 275. See Nashe, *s.v.*  
 Drift, iii. 7 = bearing, purpose.  
 Dryly, ii. 295.  
 Dub, a dubb, i. 50 = imitation of drum-beat.  
 Dungle-cockes = dunghill cocks, i. 71—or query = dungal, *i.e.* noisy (Northern).  
 Duffington, M., i. 127.  
 Dunse, ii. 246; iii. 16.  
 Dunsery, ii. 274.  
 Dunsically, dunstically, i. 194; ii. 276; iii. 16.  
 Dumpes, i. 272 = sadness.  
 Dumpish, ii. 246.  
 Duellist, ii. 55, 242.  
 Dudgen, ii. 221, 245 = discontent. But see Nares' full note, *s.v.*  
 Dubba-dubba-dubb, ii. 225—see under 'Dub-a-dubb.'  
 Ducking-chariot, ii. 229—ducking-stool for witches, scolds, etc., used as a chariot.  
 Dug, ii. 254 = breast.  
 Dummerell, ii. 283 = a dummerer, *i.e.* a dumb fellow.

Dust-footed, ii. 53.  
 Dye, iii. 214 = die—singular of 'dice.'  
 Dyer, Sir Edward, i. 7, 8, 9, 37, 75, 86, 111, 244, 266,  
 267; ii. 266.

E.

Earthquake, i. 40 *et freq.*  
 Eares, cropped, iii. 60, 61.  
 Eares, moveable, iii. 69.  
 Ecliptique, ii. 326.  
 Eckenberg, i. 295.  
 Ele of Ely, ii. 56—probably a hit at the contem-  
 porary bishop of Ely. Cf. iii. 63.  
 Ely = Ely, iii. 38.  
 Effectionate, i. 227 = affectionate.  
 Eftsoones, i. 262 *et freq.* = immediately.  
 Egging, ii. 90 = urging on? But see p. 89 ('egges')  
 —a pun perhaps meant.  
 Egall, ii. 343 = equal.  
 Egregious, i. 175; ii. 39; egregiously, i. 205, 247.  
 Eldership, ii. 149.  
 Elder tree, ii. 149, 150.  
 Eligible, ii. 276.  
 Elizabeth, Queen, i., xxv onward; xxxviii onward;  
 25; ii. 266.  
 Elderton, i. 62, 126, 163, 164, 165, 172, 201, 210; ii. 57,  
 65, 71, 96, 129, 132, 216—the drunken ballad-  
 writer.  
 Eluish, i. 222.  
 Eleuate, ii. 40, 107 = elevated; or query = high?  
 Elenticall, ii. 118 = ελεγκτικός, censorious.  
 Ely, bishop of, iii. 63.  
 Emplaster, ii. 251 = plaster.

- Empiriques, ii. 251.  
 Emproue = prove, i. 157, 286; ii. 105, 111, 129, 143, 327.  
 Emulation, i. 268.  
 Empeachments, ii. 8, 12 = accusations.  
 Embraued, ii. 19, 22.  
 Empress, ii. 114.  
 Employable, ii. 254.  
 Enhableth, ii. 165 = enableth.  
 Enormious, iii. 14 = enormous. The 'i' is frequently thus introduced.  
 Enuie, iii. 69.  
 Enure, i. 35 = make use of or bring into use.  
 Entend = attend, i. 173 = stretch to.  
 Engraced, i. 219 = made graceful or gracious.  
 Entelechy, i. 247; ii. 105, 106, 107, 283, 286, 287 = *εντελεια*, perfection, state when complete, form.  
 Enseall, i. 249 = make to seal, *i.e.* seal.  
 Endenized, i. 266.  
 Enthronished, ii. 8.  
 Ensweeten, ii. 16.  
 Encalme, ii. 16.  
 Enfright, ii. 17 = freight.  
 Enginer, ii. 41.  
 Enterlace, ii. 82.  
 Enticingest, ii. 104.  
 Entry = entrance, iii. 80.  
 Englutt, ii. 114 = glut.  
 Enchronicled, ii. 324.  
 Epiphany, ii. 286, 287.  
 Ephemeron, iii. 53.  
 Ephory, laconical, ephorie, ii. 187, 188 = inspector, inspectors (*εφορος, -οι*).

- Equipollent, i. 106 ; ii. 140.  
 Equality, unequal, ii. 159.  
 Erasmus, i. 124.  
 Errantest, ii. 32 = arrantest.  
 Essex, Earl of, i. 175 ; ii. 15, 97.  
 Eschewing, iii. 19, 52.  
 Est Amen, ii. 120, 121, 161 = conclusion or sum, but a stronger ending than the natural conclusion. Amen or So is it = It is and must be. Here is an instance : " God be praised. It is so, Amen." (*Superior of Stonyhurst College.*)  
 Ethnicke, ii. 141 = heathen.  
 Etimologised, iii. 6.  
 Euict = evince, ii. 260.  
 Euphues, i. 189, ii. 124, 128, 212, 213, 216, 218, 226. Euphues was Lyly—'young Euphues,' notwithstanding (ii. 128), seems to be Nashe.  
 Euphuing, ii. 125, 131, 219, 220.  
 Euphuisme, ii. 131, 202, 234.  
 Euphuists, ii. 223, 227.  
 Euforbium, i. 260 = euphorbium, a thorny plant, once officinal, purging, and very acrid.  
 Euangely = evangel or gospel, i. 264.  
 Experimente, ii. 33 (verb), 36 (subst.)  
 Experimented, i. 19 = experienced or tried.  
 Extemporall, i. 111, 125.  
 Exspired, i. 138 = breathed out—a kind of quibble-pun.  
 Extenuate, i. 189 ; ii. 12 = (Latinize) minish or make little or slender, this being the result of drawing a thing out as into wire.  
 Exploit, ii. 111 = seek out.

## F.

Faulte, i. 33, 34—in the former is a subst., and=made them a fault, *i.e.* done them a fault or injury; in the latter a verb.

*Faerie Queene*, i. 38, 94, 95, 164, 191, 244.

Fadg, iii. 97 = suit, agree, fit in.

Faye = faith, i. 113.

Factour, i. 126 = actor in or agent (as now).

Fauorise, ii. 171 = favour.

Fantasticalitie, i. 190, 223.

*Fauste precor gelida*, i. 195—from the first eclogue of Mantuanus, *i.e.* "Baptista Spagnolo," used then as a first Latin book in schools.

Falanta, downe-didle, i. 282—the burden of a song or songs. See Nashe's *Summer's Last Will and Testament*.

Fauourous, ii. 14 = favouring.

Factioners, ii. 43.

Faine = desire, iii. 81.

Faint, iii. 75, 80, 91 = fain—the spelling so *frequenter*.

Fa-fe-fi-to-fu, ii. 72—this was afterwards introduced into the story of "Jack the Giant Killer," with fum for fu. Probably it was at first an attempt to indoctrinate the youthful mind with the sound of the letter f when combined with the vowels, just as we have Ba-be-bi-bo-bu spelt by the child Na ha, he be, etc.

Faustus IV, ii. 200.

Fardle, ii. 221, 225 = bundle, burden.

Far to wcke, ii. 229 = far deviously, both to right and left.

- Faire, ii. 260 = a multitude, as at a market.
- Faph, ii. 273—imitative word = flaph? or query—  
Harvey's spelling of our fah or faugh?
- Fart, ii. 296.
- Fetches = tricks, i. 72.
- Fell, i. 90, ii. 115; felly, ii. 338 . . . ) Usual English ad-  
Fellest, i. 212, 247, ii. 77 . . . ) jective from Latin *fel*,  
Felinger, i. 206 . . . . . ) gall, and Fr. *felle*,  
Felnes=fellness, *i.e.* fierceness, iii. 34 ) which has also varied  
from its original mean-  
ing to fierce, cruel, etc.
- Fellowlye, i. 119 = like a fellow.
- Feid, i. 291.
- Feate, ii. 156, 325 = neat.
- Featly, ii. 277, 299.
- Feudist, ii. 81, 222, 251 = plotter of feuds, or one who  
has a feud.
- Festues, ii. 104—query = fescue = Fease-straw, the  
point or pin used to point to the letters when  
teaching. But *festuca* is Italian for straw as  
well as for fescue.
- Feciall Law, ii. 205 = Law of heralds or ambassadors  
(Latin *fecialis*).
- Festually, ii. 227.
- Ferry-penny, iii. 27 = Charon's penny, of the myth.
- Fight, plaieat least in—misprint for 'sight'? iii. 56.
- Fisnamie = physiognomy, i. 84.
- Fingeringe, i. 113.
- Filosofer = Philosopher, i. 127.
- Fier, ii. 209.
- Fie, i. 178.
- Fie out—misprint for 'fie on't,' iii. 27.
- Filly-folly, ii. 95—an intensitive reduplication, much  
like our 'fiddle-faddle' (which see).

- Fidle-fadles, ii. 98.
- Fill, iii. 80, etc., etc. = fell.
- Fillip, ii. 246 = a jerk of a finger from the other, a quick touch of a whip; hence sometimes = encouragement, and sometimes, as here, 'a touch-up.'
- Finicallitie, ii. 276 = over-niceness or over-preciseness.
- Fictionate, ii. 275—fictitious—another Nashe word here laughed at.
- Fitt = feat, iii. 80.
- Fisgig, ii. 90 = a trotter up and down (in bad sense).  
It is used now for 'fireworks' vulgarly, but query then?
- Fisking, ii. 90, 270 = frisking about, idling.
- Fiend, stamping, ii. 230—merely metaphorical.
- Fledge, i. 71—the verb used as adj. = fledged, as in Shakespeare.
- Flashes, ii. 221; flashingest, ii. 239.
- Flatte, i. 84.
- Flatly = plainly, i. 145; iii. 76.
- Flim-flams, ii. 235 = impositions, lies, nonsensical fables—used still in the United States.
- Flesh, ii. 133.
- Flush, i. 156; ii. 164 = great number.
- Flea, ii. 244—Dean Donne has celebrated the 'flea,' and Peter Woodhouse in "Democritus his Dreame. Or, the Contention between the Elephant and the Flea" (1605), reproduced in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*.
- Flurt, i. 164 = flirt, to throw with a sudden motion (dirt out) = taunt or scoff.
- Floorishingest, ii. 252.

- Fling, i. 164—used metaphorically, as when a horse  
'flings at' one he flings out his heels.
- Fleeting, i. 183, 184.
- Flibber-gibbet, ii. 272 = sycophant or lying knave.  
But see Nares, *s.v.*
- Flintly, i. 195 = flinty.
- Fleabiting, i. 198.
- Flaunt-affaunt, ii. 61. A reduplicate intensitive =  
flaunting exhibition.
- Floyd, Dr. Griffin, ii. 83.
- Floide, ii. 290.
- Fletcher, Dr., ii. 292.
- Flushing-out, ii. 114 = pouring out as a flood.
- Fleering, ii. 296 = jeering.
- Flowting-stocke, ii. 309 = a stock or stone, to be  
flouted or jeered at.
- Fooles, in *retayle*, ii. 34, 235; ship of, ii. 221;  
S., ii. 235 = fools in every item; paradise of, iii. 27.
- Fooleries = follies, i. 19, 191; ii. 219.
- Foole-munger, ii. 91.
- Foole, master, of Theater, ii. 212—merely a gibe at  
Lyly, and through him at Nashe.
- Fourmes = benches, i. 41.
- Formiddiste, i. 143 = most formidable.
- Fond, i. 160, 168 = foolish; ii. 8.
- Foist in, ii. 148, 281 = cheat.
- Foisting, i. 168; ii. 88.
- Forehorse, i. 173 = leader.
- Fortune, my foe, i. 178.
- Fox, ii. 297.
- Foxe = Dr. Perne, i. 179. (See under 'Perne, Dr.')
- He puns on Foxe's Martyrology.



- Foiled**, i. 188 = fooled (he means Greene).  
**Folio**, i. 200, 213.  
**Forspoke**, ii. 300 = bewitched.  
**Footeman**, i. 259.  
**Foiles**, i. 262.  
**Foines**, ii. 221 = fencing term for thrusts.  
**Fortune** (verb), i. 270.  
**Forspoken**, i. 283.  
**Foote**, mine owne, ii. 12.  
**Fornam'd**, ii. 24.  
**Foreman**, ii. 40.  
**Forbisher** = Frobisher, Sir Martin, ii. 96.  
**Fopp**, ii. 240 = dandy.  
**Foile**, take the, ii. 241 = take the defeat, and therefore  
in wrestling the fall; foyle, ii. 324.  
**Fortune-wright**, ii. 258, 298.  
**Fraye**, i. 43 = quarrelling disturbance.  
**French occurrences**, i. 174, 175.  
**French king**, i. 269.  
**France**, i. 218.  
**Frutefuller**, ii. 14.  
**Frump**, ii. 17 = snubb.  
**Frumpeth**, ii. 107, 133; iii. 28.  
**Friskes**, ii. 44.  
**Frisking**, ii. 51, 91, 278.  
**Franke**, ii. 110 = open.  
**Frier Rush**, Tuck, ii. 215.  
**Frank-tenement**, ii. 229 = free-tenement or free-hold-  
ing.  
**Fritters**, ii. 276 = food cut up into morsels and  
fried.  
**Front-tufted**, ii. 309—Time's forelock is meant.

- Frost, iii. 11—misprint for 'first.'  
 Frenship, Nashe taunted on, *ibid.* 45-6.  
 Fulfil, ii. 146; iii. 79.  
*Funeral Teares of Mary Magdalene*, i. 273, 288.  
 Furibundall, ii. 17 = mad or madlike—Latin *furi-*  
*bundus*.  
 Fulke, Dr., ii. 157.  
 Furnish, ii. 229.  
 Furniture, ii. 9.  
 Fustian, ii. 246 = coarse language or unmannerly;  
 also gibberish—metaphor from cloth so called.  
 Furno, Vitalis de, ii. 252.  
 Fyle = defile, i. 89.

## G.

- Gaffers, ii. 127—another Nashe word, but still used  
 = an old man.  
 Gardner, Bp., i. 72.  
 Gallantshipp, i. 122.  
 Gage, laid all to, i. 170.  
 Gascoigne, George, i. 170, 171, 180; ii. 57, 73, 96, 115,  
 290.  
 Gay nothing, i. 190 'a gay nothing,' the G being  
 used because Harvey makes it a personal nick-  
 name.  
 Garish, i. 201, 229; ii. 220, 277.  
 Gawins, i. 224 = Sir Gawin.  
 Gallimaufry, i. 282; ii. 58 = mixture of odds and  
 ends. See Nares, *s.v.*  
 Galiard, i. 296; galiardest, ii. 284—(Fr.) = lively,  
 gamesome, brave.  
 Gargantuas race, i. 296—see 'Rabelais.'

- Gargantuist, ii. 224.  
 Gag-tooth'd, ii. 18, 225 = having projecting or prominent teeth.  
 Gag-tongue, ii. 225; Gag-penne, ii. 225—a Harvey coinage, apparently meaning a tongue that projects or spues out extemporally or at once. So the other = a ready pen (in a bad sense). A 'gag,' in theatrical language, is an extempore saying inserted by the actor.  
 Gautius, ii. 25.  
 Gagliards, ii. 51; or galliards—a lively kind of dances. See 'Galiard.'  
 Gambolds, ii. 51; and Gambowle, i. 78.  
 Ganimeds, ii. 91 = Ganymedes = male harlots.  
 Gawin, tales of Sir, ii. 129, 237.  
 Garboiles, ii. 176 = turmoils.  
 Gargarismes, ii. 218 = gargles—hence metaphorically words or phrases that can't be swallowed (by any one of taste).  
 Galeasse, of knaves, ii. 221 = large ship of.  
 Gadbees, ii. 224 = stinging bees. So gad-flies.  
 Gallemalla, ii. 229.  
 Ganging, weeke and day, ii. 240 = Rogation week, because they then perambulate the (parish) boundaries.  
 Gamaliel, Hobgoblin, ii. 246.  
 Gant du Fregeuille, ii. 338.  
 Geere, i. 115 = movable goods; and so here matter, etc.  
 Gentlest, ii. 201.  
 Gentleman, Printers, ii. 88—query = our printer's devil or imp?

- Gentlewoman, i. 276-84, 295-6 ; ii. 16, 263, 264, 319, 320-27, 329. See Memorial-Introduction—Critical, in present volume.
- Gemmemint, ii. 216 = Gemmery = jewel-house — hence this = either an 'electuary' of gems or bedizening with gems—either being, according to Harvey, false gems.
- Geese, ii. 220.
- Gentility, ii. 249.
- Geryon, ii. 316.
- Giueh me, i. 57 = as my mind leadeth me, as I with probability think.
- Girdes, ii. 39, 133 = quips, taunts.
- Girding, i. 204 ; ii. 107.
- Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, i. 210, 246 ; ii. 96.
- Girke, i. 283 = jerk = beat.
- Gig, hobbling, i. 283 = spinning top.
- Girn'd, i. 297 = grinned, laughed at.
- Gibinge, ii. 75 = jibing.
- Gibeth, ii. 219.
- Gingerly, ii. 209 = carefully, quietly, nicely or mincingly.
- Gillian-flurtes, ii. 229 = flirting and flighty young women. 'Gill-flirt' is still used in Kent.
- Gibbihorse, ii. 246—query Hobby-horse ?
- Gibalter, ii. 246.
- Gilgilis Hoberdehoy, ii. 246—a Nashe phrase.
- Gibridge, ii. 270 ; iii. 36 = nonsense—a spelling of our gibberish.
- Gimpanado, ii. 275—another Nashe word.
- Glicking, i. 260 ; ii. 133 = jesting.
- Glose, ii. 10 = flatter.

- Glibbest, ii. 56 = smoothest, most voluble.  
 Glistering, ii. 149.  
 Glossomachicall, iii. 13 = tongue-fighting?  
 Gnomes, i. 218 ; ii. 309.  
 Gnarring, i. 242 = snarling.  
 Gnasharduccio, ii. 18—some Italianate invention by Harvey from our 'gnash,' with a pun on Nashe.  
 God, anecdote, iii. 33.  
 God's plenty, ii. 89 = abundance, harvest—then a common phrase. See Nashe's *S. L. W. and Test.* Curiously enough, the opposite expression, 'the devil's store,' seems to have had the same meaning.  
 Godbewyes = God-be-with-you's, i. 19. See iii. 96, 'God be wye' = God be with you.  
 Godful, i. 273 ; ii. 202.  
 Goddilige, i. 24 = God *dilige* (favour) you—same as 'God dild' and 'God ild'—usually explained (erroneously) as = God yield or requite you.  
 Godmorrowes = good-morrows, or greetings, i. 40.  
 God-ditch her = much good do it, iii. 96.  
 Goddes forbid, ii. 270.  
 God be wye = God-be-with-you, iii. 96.  
 Gorbellyed, i. 24 = large-paunched.  
 Gorgon, i. 257.  
 Goose-cap, ii. 73 = one who wears or ought to wear the goose-cap (a school punishment), and hence = a dunce or fool.  
 Gonne, ii. 187.  
 Gorge, David = George, ii. 164, 169, 176.  
 Goggle eye, ii. 211 = squint-eye.  
 Gossip, ii. 230.

- Goodman Sathan, ii. 270.  
 Gowge, ii. 290.  
 Gotam, wise men of, iii. 34 (generally Gotham) =  
 fools.  
 Gramercie, i. 78, 195, 201 = the French and English  
 'grand mercie' = great thanks.  
 Grandsier, i. 141 = Adam.  
 Grandame, ii. 38.  
 Grandiloquous, ii. 272 = grandiloquent.  
 Grafton, ii. 290.  
 Graine, in, ii. 51—metaphor from 'dyeing,' *i.e.* dyed  
 through the substance.  
 Grauelled, ii. 296 = defeated—because a wrestler when  
 thrown on the 'gravel' was defeated; or it may  
 be, run ashore, as a ship.  
 Gratulate, iii. 1.  
 Greene, Robert, i., xv, xlv, xlviii, xlix, 1; 153, 156  
 onward; 164, 165, 167, 168, 169 onward; 189,  
 203, 208; ii. 50, 75, *et freq.*  
 Greene, Infortunatus, i. 169, 170.  
 Greenwood, ii. 146.  
 Greene sleaues, i. 161—reference to a popular ballad,  
 or rather ballads.  
 Greene head, i. 172.  
 Greenesse, i. 202.  
 Grouchius, i. 119.  
 Grinuile, Sir Richard, i. 246; ii. 97.  
 Great-great, ii. 6—example of a not unfrequent re-  
 duplication = very great, etc.  
 Greeting = greeting, iii. 94.  
 Greeuousser, ii. 34.  
 Grosers, ii. 219.

Grammered, ii. 246.  
 Guise, i. 262, 295.  
 Guy, Sir, ii. 223 [of Warwick].  
 Guerras, two, ii. 250.  
 Gynne, i. 89 = if.

## H.

Hable = able, i. 32 ; ii. 112, 211, 325 ; iii. 90, etc.  
 Habilitye, i. 111, 117, 193 ; ii. 69, 111, 261, 311, 335 ;  
 iii. 90.  
 Hansomly, i, 22 ; iii. 80, etc. = dexterously, or rather  
 in a handy and quick manner.  
 Halfied, i. 119.  
 Haddon, i. 241 ; ii. 248.  
 Halliday = holy-day, iii. 75.  
 Halfpenny, ii. 65—used figuratively for that which is  
 then engrossing his thoughts.  
 Hagge, ii. 229.  
 Hagishe, ii. 92 = wild, a haggard, a wild and un-  
 reclaimed hawk.  
 Haggard, ii. 236.  
 Hackluit, ii. 96.  
 Haddock, ii. 114, 268.  
 Hale, ii. 115.  
 Hacksters, ii. 127.  
 Hammereth, ii. 237 = thinketh and broodeth, etc.,  
 works in the (head).  
 Hammer-drudge, ii. 280 = the apprentice of a black-  
 smith who can do nothing more than this in  
 his new trade.  
 Hammer-headed, iii. 16—a common phrase for a  
 heavy-headed, doltish fellow.

- Harteroote, i. 116 = root of the heart.  
 Harding, i. 234; ii. 248.  
 Harpers, blind, ii. 123.  
 Hare-brained, ii. 237.  
 Hare, legend of, iii. 59.  
 Hariot, ii. 290.  
 Harborough, ii. 330 = lodging or place of refuge (as in Spenser).  
 Hap, iii. 6 (misprinted 'harp' in the original).  
 Hardly = harder, iii. 32; = with difficulty, iii. 44.  
 HARVEY'S birth-date and birth-place, i., x; family, *ib.*; fire-place inscriptions, xi; father, xi, xii; at Cambridge, xii, xiii; quarrel, xiii; famous at, *ib.*; travelling doubtful, xiv; almanacks, *ib.*; astrology, *ib.*; candidate for orator, *ib.* and 79; Civil Law Doctor at Oxford, xiv, xv; familiar acquaintance of Sidney, xv; Spenser's Sonnet, *ib.*; books characterised, *ib.*; prolonged life, xv, xvi; folios of Spenser, xvi; elegy on death, *ib.*; Latin works, *ib.*; translated extracts, xviii; Latin verse translated extracts, xxv; books by brothers, xliii; Morley's Defence, *ib.*; critically refuted, xlv; no vindication possible, xlviii; Hexameters, *ib.*; summary estimate, xlix, 1; unpublished works, i. 69, 87, 180, 181; Letter-Book, i. 109 onward: father of, *ib.*; 160, 167, 206, 250-1; brothers, *ib.*; Richard, 186, 188; read philosophy lecture, i. 201-2; publications unauthorized, i. 202; book to be published, i. 280; John's 'Welcome to Greene,' i. 249.  
 Harvey, *story of Mercy*, iii. 73 onward.  
 Hatton, i. 246; ii. 247.



- Hauter, i. 161 = halter (for rhyme's sake).  
 Hawked, i. 262.  
 Hayhohalliday, i. 282—either another popular refrain,  
 or the cry of the lower class in joy for a holiday.  
 Hatcher, ii. 24, 83.  
 Hawks meate, iii. 85 = flesh unfitting human food;  
 besides it, includes the thought that he was a  
 preying hawk.  
 Hayle-fellowes wel met, i. 73.  
 Headdie, ii. 207 = headstrong.  
 Head-lecturer, iii. 71 = chief.  
 Hermogenes' mettall, i. 71—a rhetorician of Tarsus  
 A.D. 161—180—a noted orator at fifteen, but a  
 child after twenty-five, he having fallen into  
 mental debility.  
 Hermes, i. 142.  
 Herostratus = Erostratus, i. 155.  
 Hell-hounde, i. 290.  
 Herculean, ii. 35.  
 Hester, John, ii. 18, 289.  
 Hermaphrodites, ii. 96, 276.  
 Heteroclitall, ii. 133 = (literally) bending the wrong  
 way; hence generally used for 'irregularly  
 declined.' Here the former serves, as he is  
 speaking of Marprelate having been obscenely  
 confuted.  
 Hemerobaptistes, ii. 173—a sect so called = daily  
 baptists, because they daily washed themselves  
 (religiously).  
 Heterogenised, ii. 181 = made different in kind, made  
 heterogeneous.  
 Hereditaments, ii. 203.

- Hedge-stakes, ii. 224.  
 Hecuba, ii. 231.  
 Hexameters, i., xlviij, 7, 8, 43, 182.  
 Heywood, ii. 290; 'Faste Binde,' ii. 311.  
 Hick-scorner, ii. 132 = a libertine, who scoffs at religion, as was this character in an Interlude of the name—also applied to the Vice of a play.  
 Highgate, ii. 198.  
 Historiologers, ii. 215.  
 Hibber-gibber, ii. 63 = gibberish, unmeaning sounds or phrases, ape's language.  
 Hicket, ii. 284 = hiccough.  
 Hingelles, iii. 19.  
 Ho, ii. 128 = staying or stopping, from Ho or Whoa to a horse.  
 Hob-all-as, ii. 246.  
 Hobbling, ii. 18.  
 Hobb, blinded, ii. 277.  
 Howlets = the barn or white owls, i. 70.  
 Howlsum, i. 144 = wholesome.  
 Hooreson, i. 194; ii. 129 = whoreson } one subst.; one  
 Hoursome, ii. 232. } adjective.  
 Hore, i. 197.  
 Hoat-spurres, i. 204, 213, 232, *et freq.*  
 Horseplay, i. 214; ii. 76 = rough, or over-rough play.  
 Holly, as a holly-hock, i. 274 = as holy as a holly-hock, *i.e.*, not at all.  
 Horne, i. 284.  
 Horne-booke, ii. 215 = a sheet or page containing alphabet, etc., for learners, protected by a horn plate.  
 Hospitality, ii. 20.

- Howte, ii. 42 = hoot.
- Hotchpot, ii. 58.
- Hooke, or crooke, ii. 59, 304—one way or the other—still a common proverb. One can only suggest it is to be done by † hook or by † crook.
- Horrel-lorrel, ii. 91—a lorel or lorrel is = a worthless fellow—reduplicated by Harvey in his way.
- Hodmandod, ii. 113 = a snail.
- Holborne conduit, ii. 119.
- Hosier Lane, ii. 119.
- Hoising, ii. 133.
- Howle-glasse, ii. 215.
- Hose-on-head, ii. 245.
- Horrisonant, ii. 275.
- Homer, ii. 279, *et freq.*
- Holla, ii. 285.
- Holinshead, i. 37, 91; ii. 57, 290—in i. 91 should have been T.
- Howard, Lord Henry, ii. 291.
- Hourde = hoard, ii. 305.
- Humors, humor, i. 25, 203.
- Humorous, i. 204; ii. 277.
- Humorists, i. 215.
- Hudlid, i. 112 = huddled.
- Hubbard, Mother, i. 164, 165, 205.
- Humphrey, Duke, i. 206, 208—dine with, or be table-fellow with = not to dine at all, but to loiter at dinner-time near his (supposed) monument in Paul's.
- Huffe-snuffes, i. 241 = a hectoring, bullying fellow. Cf. Nares, *s.r.*
- Hugy, ii. 67.

- Hurly-burly, ii. 128, 176, 195.  
 Humfry, Dr., ii. 157, 292.  
 Hugger-mugger, ii. 214 = in secrecy.  
 Huff, ruff, snuffe, ii. 217—significant names applied to the 'ruffians': cf. 'Huff-snuff.'  
 Humanitarian, ii. 227.  
 Huckstering, ii. 270 = bargaining.  
 Huffing, ii. 286 = scolding, or by use swaggering. Cf. 'Huff-snuff,' etc.  
 Hutton, Dr., ii. 291.  
 Hypocrase, i. 47 = a drink composed of wine, spices and sugar strained. See Nares, *s.v.*  
 Hypocrites, i. 261.  
 Hypocrise, ii. 296 (verb).

## I.

- I = ay, i. 207.  
 Icary = Icarus, i. 193.  
 Ideotisme, iii. 29.  
 If, and if, i. 260.  
 Ignatius-like, iii. 42.  
 Ilfaorited, i. 142.  
 Ile, ii. 7, 219.  
 Illumine, ii. 9.  
 Illuminate, ii. 135.  
 Immerito = Spenser, i. 5, 180, *et freq.*  
 Imputation, i. 70—a gird at the Puritan-evangelical doctrine of the 'imputation of Christ's righteousness' or merits.  
 Importune, i. 221.  
 Impounded, i. 267.  
 Imitation, i. 268.

- Impudentest, ii. 34.  
 Imperfections, ii. 166.  
 Imprest, iii. 10—Harvey's English for *impressa*, a  
 mot or motto.  
 Inameld, iii. 75, 78—in the former misspelled in  
 original 'enameld.'  
 Infectiue, i. 45 = infectious.  
 Infortunately, i. 118.  
 Innocent III., i. 119.  
 Incontinently, i. 141 = at once.  
 Incidentally = incidentally, i. 153.  
 Interluding, i. 169.  
 Indifferent, -ly, i. 173, 176, 220; ii. 10, 127, 140 =  
 impartial.  
 Indifference, i. 203, 221; ii. 140, 202, 318, 330 =  
 impartiality.  
 Indefeasable, i. 191.  
 Inwardest, i. 194.  
 Interlaced, i. 195, 200, 244; ii. 100.  
 Inckhorne, witches, i. 204 = scribbling revilers,  
 'witches' being then used as =wizards or fem.  
 witches; pads, i. 223—literally 'pads that sucked  
 up the superfluous ink,' metaphorically = ink-  
 wasters.  
 Inkhornisme, ii. 274, 275—another Nashe coinage =  
 ink-wasting.  
 Inculpable, i. 211.  
 Injury, i. 237 (verb); ii. 292, 301, 313.  
 Intertrace, i. 241.  
 Intendiments, i. 264; ii. 7.  
 Insultes, i. 297 = triumphs, exults.  
 Intentions, ii. 59.

- Intende, ii. 59 = to stretch towards—a Latinate sense preserved in ‘intentions.’
- Indistillation, ii. 79 = distillation, *i.e.* the extract distilled over.
- Ingland, ii. 95.
- Innovation, ii. 149.
- Indulgentially, ii. 161.
- Interluders, ii. 216.
- Infancy, ii. 242.
- Inamoratos, ii. 275.
- Infamizers, ii. 276.
- Inditement, ii. 276.
- Infringement, ii. 276.
- Inuect, iii. 20.
- Indiiduals, iii. 59.
- Irish tricke, ii. 128.
- Irefulnesse, ii. 276.
- Isam, i. 171, 173—as shown elsewhere, the name of Greene’s hostess and sick-nurse.
- Itch = hitch, *i.e.*, to raise up and move a short distance, ii. 127.
- I wis, i. 211 ; ii. 160, 194, 210, 227, 296 = I wish (too late).

J.

\*.\* Some of the words herein are spelled with I for J, as was the mode.

- Iack-sauce, ii. 328 = nickname for a saucy Jack.
- Jack-mates, i. 73 = equal mates, as explained by the “Hayle,” etc.
- Iamye, Don, iii. 78—looks as if the lord’s name were ‘James.’

- Jauell, ii. 114—query Tubal-cain?  
 James I. [VI. of Scotland], ii. 21, 102.  
 Jewell, Bp., i. 234; ii. 48.  
 Iest-dropsie, ii. 213—he ridiculously supposes that he will be ill (dropsied) from the biting jests made on him.  
 Jet, iii. 65.  
 Jetteth, ii. 313 — to go in and out with the legs wantonly [*i.e.* boastfully].—Cotgrave.  
 Jews, ii. 113, 178, 180, 181.  
 Jewes trumpe, ii. 146, 239 — Jews'-harp, and still so called, in Scotland at least.  
 Jewes eye, ii. 146, 241.  
 Jerkes, ii. 213.  
 Joineth, i. 149.  
 Jumpe, i. 119 — adv. equally; ii. 130 — verb agree.  
 Jybinge, i. 115.

## K.

- K. E. — Edward Kirke, i. 8. See *Spenser's Works* (Grosart), vol. iii., pp. cviii *seq.*; i. 8, 38, 59.  
 Kallowe — callow, i. 72.  
 Key-cold, i. 70—a key, from its metal coldness, was a usual remedy, dropped down the back, for bleeding of the nose.  
 Kelly, ii. 68, 69.  
 Kelke, Dr., ii. 191, 192.  
 Kett, i. 205, 294; ii. 167, 169, 176, *et freq.*  
 Kinde, ii. 229 — the special kind or nature.  
 Kindly kindly, i. 171; ii. 252, 257, 295 — of kin.  
 Kind-hart, ii. 263—query suggested by Chettle's 'Kind Hart's Dream,' 1592?

- Killcowes, i. 204 ; ii. 18, 129, 195, 224 = redoubtable heroes (from Sir Guy of Warwick's exploit), but used burlesquely.
- Kibe, i. 296 = a galled sore on the heel. There seems here to be a wretched quibble on bile = bill and bile = boil.
- Kilprickes, Sir, ii. 88, 89 = chilpirics.
- Kenols, Dr., ii. 90.
- Kiffin, ii. 290—query Griffin? If the latter, his Poems will be found collected in Dr. Grosart's *Occasional Issues*.
- Kitchin stuffe, ii. 230, 232.
- Knit up = conclude, i. 60.
- Knicknackes, i. 80.
- Knaues, in grosse, ii. 34 ; a name, iii. 48—explained *s.v.* 'Grain.'
- Knacking, iii. 16.
- Kodpeased = cod-pieced, i. 84.
- Kylgarran Forest, i. 129.
- Kyon, iii. 56.

L.

- Lads of the castell, i. 225. See under 'Castell.'
- Lade, iii. 41.
- Laid at her = kept at her, iii. 79.
- Lamback'd, i. 183 ; ii. 210 = beat severely, as *Lam* signifies, whence it is compounded.
- Lambacker, ii. 210.
- Lammeswool, ii. 74 = a drink composed of ale and of the pulp of roasted apples.
- Lambert, ii. 291.
- Lambskin, ii. 210.



- Lampsacens, ii. 249.  
 Larke, ii. 199 = the bird so known.  
 Lash, ii. 213 = to beat sharply.  
 Lashed, i. 214.  
 Lashing, i. 202.  
 Launcelot, i. 276 ; ii. 225.  
 Launcing, ii. 60 = lancing.  
 Laxatiue, i. 18, 65.  
 Lazarello, ii. 231.  
 Lasie-bones, ii. 283 = a lazy fellow.  
 Lauherne, M., ii. 292.  
 Letter monger, ii. 55.  
*Letters* between Harvey and Spenser, i. 1 onward ;  
 published furtively, i. 180.  
*Letter, New, of Notable Contents*, i. 255 onward.  
 Leifest = dearest, iii. 77 ; leifer, iii. 90.  
 Legendary, i. 170, 190.  
 Legs, drollery on, iii. 52 onward.  
 Lepanto, i. 264, 265 ; ii. 102.  
 Lest, iii. 79—query = least ? or last ?  
 Lewen, ii. 24, 83.  
 Levell, ii. 59 = aim at ; levelling = laying level or  
 true ; 278 = aim at.  
 Levelleth, ii. 108, 233.  
 Leripups, ii. 78, 278 = *lirripops*—formerly tails  
 attached to the hood of D.D. and of magis-  
 trates. See Nares, s.r., and Du Cange. Here  
 apparently = the knowledge enjoyed by such.  
 Halliwell-Phillipps says it is also used for a  
 silly fellow [by way of irony].  
 Letteth, ii. 141, 200 = hindereth.  
 Lesbian canons, ii. 147.

- Lemnius, Doctour, ii. 252.  
 Lead, a little lumpe of, iii. 50.  
 Letters, iii. 82—an odd use of the plural where but one was meant.  
 Linne, i. 26, 187 ; ii. 143 =cease.  
 Liuelye, i. 27, 75 =life-like.  
 Listeth, i. 40, 140 =chooseth.  
 Ligge, i. 92 =lie.  
 Lightly, iii. 62 = usually.  
 Litely = lightly, i. 137.  
 Living =mode of life, i. 206.  
 Libbard = leopard =Nashe ? i. 270 ; ii. 211, 261.  
 Liberall sciences, iii. 46.  
 Liberallest, ii. 5.  
 Licentiousnesse, i. 200—not = sexual licentiousness.  
 Linke = torch, ii. 9.  
 Little-little, ii. 12 = very little.  
 Lilly, ii. 124, 125. See under ' Euphues,' etc.  
 Lilly, William, iii. 13.  
 Lillypot, ii. 219—a sort of pun upon Lyly.  
 Listers, Captain, ii. 221.  
 Licorise, ii. 254 = sweetness (because liquorice is sweet).  
 Linsy-woolsie, ii. 317 = a fabric of linen and wool, hence = mean or of unsuitable parts.  
 Like in, iii. 20 ; feele of a like = make trial of, iii. 76, 80 = looking for a trial of—fetched from the practice and phrase of ' going upon liking ' = going upon trial, a sort of agreement often made between master and would-be man. At iii. 86 ' weene of a like,' *i.e.* of one like a fool, meaning herself.

- Lichfield, Richard, iii. 8, 13, 15.  
 Lingua, lingendo, ligando, iii. 20.  
 Liech = leech, *i.e.* physician, iii. 53.  
 Lincoln, Bishop of, iii. 63.  
 Lowte, i. 84 ; ii. 339.  
 Lob-assar duck, ii. 263.  
 Lobbelinus, ii. 41, 243—apparently a Latinization of  
 Lobbel or Lobel = Lob, a clown.  
 Lockes, long, iii. 61.  
 Lop, in a chaine, iii. 43 = a flea (in Northern counties).  
 Lordship, reuerend, ii. 155.  
 Lords, spiritual, ii. 156.  
 Lordly, iii. 85 = as a lord, graciously.  
 Lucianist, i. 190.  
 Lucianicall, i. 166, 172.  
 Luciferian, ii. 166.  
 Lurdane, ii. 250 = a heavy, stupid, lazy fellow—from  
*lourd*, heavy, and *lourdin*, a heavy clown (French).  
 See Nares, *s.v.* In Scotland it is equally applied  
 to lazy, slovenly females. Cf. E. K.'s Glosse on  
 Spenser's *Shepherd's Calendar*, *s.v.*  
 Lusher—*qy.* lasher ? see *s.v.*, iii. 26, 27.  
 Lust, ii. 208.  
 Luste, i. 187.  
 Lusted, ii. 285.  
 Lycester = Lord, players, i. 125 ; ii. 84, Leicester.  
 Lyon-dragon, ii. 17.

## M.

- Madame-towne, ii. 267 = chief town, from use of  
 'Madam.'  
 Maligne, i. 9.

- Malt, ii. 229.  
 Mammets, ii. 223 = puppets or dolls.  
 Mammet, Captaine, ii. 223—an epithet, not a name —  
     Lyly as chief mammet or chief of the mammets  
     or boy-actors.  
 Marry, i. 20, 23, 71, 103, *et frequenter* = sub-reference  
     to Virgin Mary originally—here an exclamation.  
 Mashippe = mastership, i. 26.  
 Mayne sea = ocean, i. 59.  
 Maltworm = tippler, i. 72.  
 Magnificoes, i. 84 ; ii. 220.  
 Magnifically, ii. 261.  
 Matchable, i. 95 ; ii. 136.  
 Marble booke, i. 107 = book of lasting record.  
 Mallconceiued, i. 125.  
 Marchepane, i. 130, 163 = a mixture of sugar and  
     almonds like our Macaroons. See Nares, *s.v.*  
 Maydenly excuses, i. 135.  
 Makeshift, i. 161, 189.  
 Martin Mar-prelate, i. 164, 252 ; ii. 49, 57, 121, 124  
     onward ; 133 onward ; 150 onward ; 158 onward ;  
     196 onward ; 197, 205, *et freq.*  
 Malcontented, i. 164.  
 Malmesie, i. 170, 171 = Malmsey wine.  
 Martinish, and counter-Martin, i. 203.  
 Martinists, ii. 312.  
 Martin of the Vintry, ii. 177.  
 Madbraynest, i. 214.  
 Magni, ii. 188.  
 Magie, i. 229 = magic.  
 Main (adj.), i. 262.

- Mainest**, i. 275.  
**Main chance**, i. 262; ii. 232.  
**Maine stroke**, ii. 147.  
**Mahomet**, i. 264, *et freq.*  
**Mating**, i. 275—chess term.  
**Marmalad**, i. 280.  
**Marlow**, i. 289, 292, 296-7; ii. 115, 322.  
**Mariegod**, iii. 94, 96 = Christ Jesus, *i.e.* God by Mary.  
**Marlowisme**, ii. 234.  
**Marchant-venturer**, ii. 45, 125, 306.  
**Magnes** = magnet, ii. 104, 247—Latin form then in use; and I regret that I inserted the 't' in i. 249.  
**Madnesse**, ii. 109.  
**Mandillion**, ii. 130 = a loose hanging garment like a (long) jacket; but what was intended by 'ouer-cropped' Editor knoweth not.  
**Mammaday**, ii. 130, 216—in the first reference a person, in the second not.  
**Marian, maide**, ii. 229.  
**Maulkin**, ii. 230 = malkin, a diminutive of 'Mary,' generally used in contempt. See *Coriolanus* ii. 1.  
**Malapertly**, ii. 242, 280.  
**Massacrous**, ii. 243.  
**Man a man**, ii. 245—used by Nashe also.  
**Machaon**, ii. 251.  
**Mad dogs**, iii. 57-8.  
**Make-bate**, ii. 272.  
*Magdalen's, Mary, Teares*, ii. 291.  
**Mathew, Dr.**, ii. 292.  
**Margents**, iii. 15, 16.  
**Meating** = meeting, iii. 75.

- Metaphysically, i. 57 = supernaturally.  
 Meteorologists, i. 58.  
 Metaposcopus, i. 72 = seer of changes? "Error for 'Metaposcopus.' A diviner who judges of one's fate by his countenance. See Sueton., 'Tit.' viii. 2; also Holland's Pliny, ii. 539 D." (Mr. W. G. Stone, as before.)  
 Metaphisitian, iii. 22.  
 Meane = meantime, i. 173.  
 Mentery, i. 250 = lying (subst. formed from Latin verb *mentior*).  
 Meere-meere, i. 276 = merest, or very.  
 Message, i. 277.  
 Meacock, ii. 17, 49 = milksop or poor-hearted fellow.  
 Meat, in the mouth, carryeth, ii. 47 = carrieth nourishment.  
 Meat, cats and dogs, ii. 71, 72, 73, *et freq.*  
 Messalinists, ii. 91.  
 Medina, Peter de, ii. 97—a Spanish writer on navigation translated into English and French.  
 Mercator, mappe of, ii. 130.  
 Meokekim, ii. 180.  
 Methodists, ii. 181.  
 Mechanicall dealinges, ii. 194.  
 Megg, long, of Westminster, ii. 229.  
 Meridarpax, ii. 242 = *μερις* and *αρπαξ* = rapacious sharer.  
 Mendechmi, two, ii. 250—error for Menæchmei (comedy of Plautus).  
 Merle = marl, ii. 289.  
 Milkmaidelike, iii. 81.  
 Mirandola, i. 64.

- Miserable = sorrowful, and more, i. 118.  
 Mildmay, Sir Walter, i. 182, 246; ii. 84.  
 'Mirror of Tuscanisme,' i. 183—a booklet by Harvey.  
 Mission, i. 197; ii. 121.  
 Minerall, i. 201.  
 Minions, ii. 7, 41, 46, 284.  
 Milksop, ii. 17, 49 = a fellow as soft as sopped milk,  
 or as the child who eats it.  
 Militar, ii. 35.  
 Mingle-mangles, ii. 39 = a confused and incongruous  
 mixture.  
 Misrule, lord of, ii. 127.  
 Mise = mice, ii. 242.  
 Mutchie goditch, iii. 96.  
 Miscreantest, ii. 271 = misbelievingest, and hence  
 'most wicked.'  
 Miscreant, iii. 10.  
 Morley, Professor Henry, i., x, xiii, xiv, xvii, xviii,  
 xliii onward.  
 Most what, i. 16—a word opposed to 'somewhat'  
 = chiefly.  
 Most-rough, i. 212.  
*Motus v. metus terræ*, i. 46.  
 Mote-spying, i. 166; ii. 163.  
 'Mother Hubbard,' i. 205 = Spenser's poem, *not* the  
 Nursery 'Mother Hubbard.'  
 Moates, i. 210.  
 Momeutany, i. 262 = momentary.  
 More, Sir Thomas, ii. 46, 136, 244.  
 Mother pearie, ii. 51—now mother-of-pearl.  
 Moother-sea, ii. 182 = primary source.  
 Mounting, ii. 51 = rising or aspiring, as still used.

- Moonshine, egges in, ii. 63 = flim-flams.  
 Modernistes, ii. 63.  
 Money, go for my, ii. 98 = for my choice.  
 Monomachies, ii. 101 = single combats.  
 Mowgh, ii. 224 = mow, make mouths.  
 Moone, Man in the, ii. 234 ; iii. 8.  
 Mockage, ii. 270.  
 Motts, ii. 307 ; iii. 16.  
 Moderatour, iii. 32.  
 Mucus snotte, iii. 27.  
 Mustachyoes, i. 116, 131 = moustache.  
 Mum, i. 134 ; ii. 302.  
 Mummer, ii. 312.  
 Musteringe, i. 168.  
 Mutes, i. 203.  
 Murr, i. 242 ; iii. 9—in Devon = mouse ; a 'murre'  
     is also a severe cold in the throat.  
 Muses, the, iii. 51-2.  
 Muske, i. 261.  
 Mutinous, ii. 20, 43, 262.  
 Muchgo-ditch-them, ii. 90 = much good do it them.  
     Cp. *Timon of Athens*, i. 2.  
 Muck-hill, ii. 233 = dunghill.  
 Mulcaster, ii. 291.  
 Munday, ii. 290.

## N.

- N. H., ii. 114, 117, 119, 170, 176, 294.  
 Nashe, Thomas, i., ix, xv, xlv, xlvi, xlvii, xlix, 1 ; 170,  
     206, 218, 273-89 ; ii. 23, 222, 269 onward ; iii. 9  
     onward ; caricature-portrait, iii. 43 ; life of, iii. 67  
     onward—*frequenter* incidentally.



- Nash, whaten...iii. 33, 67.  
 Nashes S. Fame, ii. 10, 16, 25, 29, 31; ii. 81, 189, *et freq.*  
 —from a phrase used by Nashe. See Nashe, *s.v.*  
 Nasherie, ii. 230, 234.  
 Na, i. 141; ii. 51, 71, 77, 78, *et freq.*  
 Namely, and, i. 117, 183; ii. 294; iii. 67.  
 Name, good, i. 167.  
 Nauarre, i. 295; ii. 15.  
 Nappy, i. 283.  
 Nappiest, ii. 51, 114 = strongest.  
 Naturalls, ii. 292, 293.  
 Napry, in suddes, ii. 301; iii. 16 = linen, table linen  
 in the wash.  
 Naulum, iii. 27 = mediæval dog-Latin, like 'Upsee  
 freeze super nagulum' = the thumb nail.  
 Ne, i. 253.  
 Neb, i. 186.  
 Neat, ii. 93, 174, 199, 218, 227.  
 Neatest, ii. 62, 184.  
 Neckverse, ii. 281; iii. 26 = the verse read by a  
 malefactor to entitle him to benefit of clergy—  
 generally Psalm li. 1. (Nares, *s.v.*)  
 Neronists, ii. 91 = like the (infamous) Nero.  
 Neerelyest, ii. 219.  
 Nephew, ii. 263.  
 Negotiations, ii. 274.  
 Neighbourly, ii. 277.  
 Neptunist, ii. 290.  
 Nectarize, i. 243.  
 Newfangleness, i. 191.  
 Newfangled, ii. 8, 275.  
 New-new, i. 233 = most new.

- New-found Landes, ii. 36, 45, 176.  
 Newgate, ii. 8.  
 Nihilagents, i. 99.  
 Niffles, i. 134, 136, 283 = trifles (Chaucer, etc.)  
 Nice, i. 249; ii. 158.  
 Nippitaty, i. 283; ii. 51, 54, 115. Cf. '*Summer's Last Will and Testament*.'  
 Nipping, ii. 59, 223—used in the double sense of (1) taunting or satirizing; (2) cheating.  
 Nine-hole nidgets, ii. 130—'Nidget' is in Kent, part of a plough. It also means a 'fool.' The whole phrase = the game either of Nine holes, or of Nine mens morris; on which see Nares, and especially Strutt.  
 Nouels, i. 191, 259, 270—in Italian sense = *novella*, a tale, noveltie, discourse, news (Florio).  
 Nouellets, i. 215.  
 Nouellists, ii. 208 = makers of new discourses and new ideas. Cf. 'Nouels.'  
 Nouice, i. 219.  
 Nœe de la, ii. 21, 104.  
 Nominate, ii. 9.  
 Norris, Sir John, i. 175; ii. 97.  
 Norman, Robert, ii. 97, 289.  
 Nosing, ii. 125.  
 Noyous, ii. 282 = noyful or full of annoyance.  
 Noddy, ii. 327 fool.  
 Nonproficients, i. 99.  
 Norton, ii. 291.  
 Numantine warre, ii. 135, 169.  
 Nullitie, ii. 176.  
 Nusled, ii. 189, 267 = nuzzled [*i.e.* nustled up close].

## O.

- Oblivion, law of, i. 276 ; moth of fame, iii. 50.  
 Occurrents, i. 138 ; ii. 11.  
 Occursiuly, i. 190 ; ii. 306 = occasionally, literally  
 'as one meets it.'  
 Occasion, ii. 309.  
 Occasionet, ii. 122 = small occasion.  
 Occupationer, ii. 290.  
 Oestride = ostrich, ii. 236.  
 Oeconomer, ii. 257.  
 Oh-is, i. 234 = O yes (*oyes*) of the public crier.  
 Oisterwhore, ii. 345—a derisive term for an oysterwife,  
 because of her abusive propensities (and worse).  
 Omnigatherum, i. 190—now 'omniumgatherum.'  
 Omni-sufficient, ii. 40, 46, 110, 138, 141.  
 Omniscious, ii. 70, 180 = all-knowing.  
 Omniscians, ii. 287.  
 Omnidexterity, ii. 299 = an intensitive form of  
 ambidexterity or versatility.  
 On = one, i. 112 *et frequenter* : looks oddly in iii. 75  
 onward.  
 One, ii. 168.  
 Onely, i. 217.  
 Onion, teares of the, vpon the Theater, i. 292.  
 Oneale, John, i. 248.  
 Openest, ii. 77.  
 Opportunity, i. 262.  
 Opiniotiue, ii. 135.  
 Ortographie = orthography, i. 76.  
 Oratour, perfect, i. 291.  
 Orpheously, i. 245 = like Orpheus.

- Orient, ii. 6 = bright, the east being the sun's rising place.
- Ordure, ii. 115.
- Orders, fower and twentie, ii. 130.
- Oryx, iii. 58—a wild beast in Africa variously described. Cf. Pliny and Batman.
- Ostisses, ii. 121 = hostesses.
- Ostes = hosts, i. 145.
- Otherwhyles, i. 28, 55 ; ii. 82, *et freq.*
- Other = others, ii. 188, 189, *et freq.*
- Ouen-mouth, ii. 231 = large or omniverous mouth.
- Outlandishe, i. 123, 137.
- Ouerbarish, i. 112.
- Ouersensibely, i. 123.
- Overstate, i. 130.
- Ouershot, i. 164.
- Ouer-prize, i. 165.
- Ouer-fly, i. 179.
- Ouer-read, i. 180.
- Ouer-thwartes, i. 183, 215.
- Ouer-mounting, i. 193.
- Ouerpitteous, i. 193.
- Ouerlightheaded, i. 200.
- Ouerskippe, i. 219, 267.
- Ouerwhirld, i. 295.
- Ouerstumbling, ii. 25.
- Ouership, ii. 48.
- Ouercrowed, ii. 80, 235.
- Ouerlashing, ii. 197.
- Ouertreated, ii. 341 = treated or persuaded over or against my judgment.
- Oxforde, Earl of, i. 183.

## P.

- Painefullest, ii. 36.  
 Pale = paling, iii. 76.  
 Paynefull = painstaking, i. 8.  
 Paulting = pelting or peddling, i. 62, 96, 116, 119,  
*et freq.*—*qy.* paltring, worthless trash?  
 Paultringe, ii. 98.  
 Paltrye, i. 163, 184 ; ii. 95 = subst. trifles.  
 Pallace, of Pleasure, ii. 100.  
 Panormitan, ii. 247.  
 Patcheries, i. 107.  
 Paionius, i. 119.  
 Painture, ii. 118.  
 Pancridge, ii. 210 = Pancras (St.).  
 Pandare, ii. 111.  
*Papp wyth a hatchet*, i. 164 ; ii. 49, 121, 124 onward ;  
 126 onward ; 211, 213.  
 Painim, ii. 253, 276.  
 Parma, i. 175, 295.  
 Paramours, ii. 121.  
 Packe, of vanity, i. 201 ; ii. 256 = packman's bundle.  
 Packing, ii. 295 = thread or continuity of the discourse.  
 Packhorse, ii. 224.  
 Paniar, ii. 256.  
 Parlous, i. 138, 205 ; ii. 110, 128, 213, 246.  
 Paper-bugs, i. 223 = paper sprites or frighteners.  
 Paper-brabbing, i. 235.  
 Paper-sweat, ii. 213.  
 Parthenophil, i. 259 ; ii. 14, 22.  
 Parthenopæus, ii. 15.  
 Pamflet-marchants, i. 286.  
 Particular, i. 292.

- Padd, i. 291 ; ii. 241, 294—the former foot-creepers  
or qy. deceivers? the last = deceit.
- Paint, ii. 10.
- Paranymphes, ii. 21.
- Pasquils, ii. 43.
- Patch, ii. 46 = fool.
- Party, ii. 47.
- Palmastry, ii. 70.
- Pasquils, ii. 168.
- Paradise, fooles, ii. 167.
- Paradiseth, ii. 266.
- Pappadocio, ii. 216, 222—as Braggadochio.
- Patch-pannel, ii. 280 = one who is shabby or wears  
worn-out clothes.
- Parbreake, ii. 284 = vomit.
- Paragon, ii. 226.
- Pay-home, ii. 295 = pay thoroughly in return.
- Passionatest, ii. 340.
- Patterne, iii. 10.
- Parasitupocriticall, iii. 13 = compound of *παρασιτος*  
and *ὑποκρισις*.
- Pantophainoudendeconticall, iii. 13.
- Parergasticall, iii. 15.
- Parkers = keepers of the park, iii. 48.
- Pattins = pattens, the common name for clogs raised  
on an iron rim so as to keep the shoe out of the  
mire.
- Pamphleters, iii. 67.
- Partiality, ii. 46.
- Passed = cared, iii. 77.
- Pearson, William, elegy by, i., xvi.
- Pederastice, i. 290.

- Personage = person, i. 83.
- Pennifathers, pinche fart, i. 204—Nashe uses the word in the singular ('P. P.,' p. 16). Either it was a phrase current, or = a miserly fellow, as is most probable.
- Penny, S., i. 99; penny, ii. 194.
- Pennyworth, i. 283; ii. 189.
- Pedomancie, ii. 210 = discerning by the feet—one of Harvey's jocularities.
- Petitory, i. 117.
- Pester, ii. 262, 276, 280.
- Pestred, ii. 226.
- Peagooses, ii. 239 = a nickname—Harvey's joke on peacock.
- Pennycoste = Pentecost, i. 126—evidently a jocular variation. Cf. context.
- Petite, i. 131.
- Perne, Dr., i. 73, 183, 194, 208; ii. 90, 294—317.
- Pembrokes, i. 191.
- Pembroke, Countess of, i. 267; ii. 100, 266.
- Peccauias, i. 199.
- Pelting, ii. 112.
- Penia, i. 199.
- Period, ii. 16.
- Pestelenter, i. 204.
- Percase, i. 233; ii. 6, 173, 299 = perchance.
- Pen-scolding, i. 235.
- Pen-powder, ii. 17.
- Periwig, ii. 278.
- Petrarch, ii. 92.
- Petrarch, Inglishe, ii. 93.
- Peckham, John, ii. 179.

- Peterhouse, Cambridge, ii. 297.  
 Perpolike = polite, iii. 17.  
 Pheere, i. 129.  
 Phaer, i. 129.  
 Phantast, ii. 107 = a fantasy-monger or fantastic.  
 Phantasticallitye, i. 189; ii. 65.  
 Philippiques, i. 210.  
 Phy, i. 295; ii. 273, *et freq.*  
 Phah, ii. 118 = our interjection 'pah.'  
 Philip, Dr. Barth., ii. 187.  
 Pinne, i. 65.  
 Pickethankes, i. 71; ii. 272.  
 Picklocke, iii. 48.  
 Pickstrawes, i. 72.  
 Pickgoose, ii. 64.  
 Picker-deuant, ii. 252 = a beard cut to a point, V  
 shape.  
 Pickpocket, ii. 272.  
 Pickpurse, ii. 272, 281.  
 Piperly, i. 168; ii. 113, 220, 280.  
 Pierce-Penni-lesse, i. 194; ii. 50.  
*Pierce's Supererogation*, ii. 27 onward.  
 Pisces, iii. 53.  
 Pinche-fart Penny-fathers, i. 204.  
 Pinsons, i. 281 = pincers.  
 Pinching, ii. 180.  
 Pincheth, ii. 219.  
 Pibalde, ii. 219, 267.  
 Pidling, ii. 18, 49, 181.  
 Pike sawce, ii. 228 = abusive or thrusting sauciness :  
 or query 'sound thrashing' ?  
 Pikes, ii. 60.



- Pight = pitched, placed, ii. 112.  
 Pilch, ii. 187.  
 Pistlepragmos, ii. 276.  
 Pilfryes, ii. 276.  
 Pinked, iii. 64 = adorned, or the like.  
 Pitch-branded = marked with pitch—as sheep are ?  
     ii. 317.  
 Placeboes, i. 88.  
 Plausible, i. 85 = applauded, 209 ; ii. 19, 25, 125, 156,  
     175, 326 = present use, ii. 249.  
 Platforme, i. 225, 247, 278 ; ii. 134, 174, 197, 285, 294  
     = plan.  
 Platformers, i. 223, 268 ; ii. 64, 186, 194, 199.  
 Placarde, ii. 19.  
 Pleade-it-out, ii. 42.  
 Play-munger, ii. 132.  
 Play-maker, ii. 215.  
 Players, i. 125.  
 Plant, man or, iii. 39, 40.  
 Pluckcrow, ii. 18.  
 Poesies = poetry, i. 34.  
 Poores = pores, i. 44.  
 Pottle, i. 47.  
 Pottypósis, i. 48 = a would-be humorous word, pot,  
     or pottle, ποσις (drink).  
 Pocket-vp, i. 166, 185, 222.  
 Poueretto, i. 206.  
 Polemechany, i. 230—from πολλος, many (here probably  
     = varied), μηχανη, mechanism, contrivance.  
 Post ride, i. 259.  
 Pope, i. 262.  
 Pouerable, i. 263, 271 ; ii. 37, 106, 180, 239.

- Poinado, ii. 211, 226 = poniard—origin of form seemingly unknown.
- Popularly tyrannise, ii. 183.
- Powles, i. 295, *et freq.*
- Popiniay, ii. 8 = parrot.
- Pott, ii. 17.
- Postambles, ii. 24.
- Point, ii. 44.
- Points vntrust, iii. 88 = his tags untied or his trousers unbuttoned.
- Pocke, ii. 52.
- Poulcat, ii. 73, 273 = polecat.
- Poudred, ii. 100.
- Pollicy, ii. 141.
- Polycletus, ii. 147.
- Popular, ii. 188.
- Potestats, ii. 194, 195.
- Pontalais, M., ii. 223.
- Powting, ii. 229, 246.
- Podalirius, ii. 251.
- Poogh = Puck? ii. 273. Here, perhaps, generical for a devil, spirit, etc.
- Poppy, ii. 328.
- Poly-pragmaticall, iii. 13.
- Post-pendence, iii. 32—the allusion is evidently to 'wiping himself' with the nettle, the 'post' having reference to something 'behind.' This is a vulgarity even Nashe would hardly have been guilty of in print.
- Pot verses, iii. 37—query pottery inscriptions? or more probably verses made under the influence of a pot of liquor, like Elderton's.

- Pragmaticall, ii. 274, 275, 303 (noun).  
 Preston, i. 9.  
 Preiudice, i. 77, 189.  
 Predicamento, i. 170, 267; ii. 237.  
 Premeditate, i. 177.  
 Preposterous, i. 179.  
 President = precedent, i. 195, 265, *et freq.*  
 Preuenteth = anticipateth, i. 251.  
 Prostrate, i. 260.  
 Pretext, i. 261.  
 Prest, i. 262; ii. 9, 78.  
 Practised, i. 262; ii. 10.  
 Princock, i. 283; ii. 7 = a pert, forward youth.  
 Pretence, ii. 180.  
*Precursor of Pierce's Supererogation*, ii. 1 onward.  
 Prank-*vp*, ii. 8.  
 Preiudicate, ii. 14, 135, 164.  
 Praise-mouing, ii. 19.  
 Precisians, ii. 49, 159, 163.  
 Primrose hill, ii. 110, 112, 220.  
 Presbiter, Iohn, ii. 146.  
 Pregnanter, ii. 157.  
 Prankest up, ii. 240.  
 Prouiditore, ii. 275—a Nashe word quoted and laughed  
 at: Italian = provider, purveyor.  
 Prestigiously, ii. 315.  
 Precise, iii. 14.  
 Prayse, iii. 27.  
 Press hunters, iii. 67.  
 Prettely = craftily, iii. 80.  
 Proofoe, reproofe, ii. 148.  
 Prouisoos, ii. 38.

## Proverbs, proverbial sayings, etc., etc.

- 'Whiles the yron is hote, it is good striking,'  
i. 7.
- 'I am now tolde (in the Diuels name),' i. 11.
- 'Hunt the letter,' i. 18 = alliterate.
- 'Your hotte yron is so hotte that it striketh mee  
to the hearte,' i. 20.
- 'The Tyde tarryeth no manne,' *ibid.*
- 'Beggars, they saye, muste be no choosers,' *ibid.*
- 'A foote more than a lowce,' i. 21.
- 'A lame Gosling that draweth one legge after  
hir,' i. 35.
- A lame Dogge that holdes vp one legge,' *ibid.*
- 'Why a Gods name,' i. 18, 35.
- 'Nothing in the world lesse,' i. 41.
- 'The Euill (in the diuels name)...i. 45.
- 'Rime nor Reason,' i. 46.
- 'All is not Gould that glistereth,' i. 47.
- 'Tell vs a trim goodly Tale of Robinhood,' *ibid.*
- 'Sawe farther in a Milstone than all the worlde  
besides,' i. 67.
- 'Iacke would fain be a Gentlemanne,' i. 70.
- 'Neither Barrell greatly better Herring,' i. 71.
- 'Vntil I haue a little better consulted with my  
pillowe,' i. 76.
- 'Their hand vpon their halfpenny,' i. 92 = con-  
sider whether to spend it profitably or no.
- 'There a straw, and you love me,' i. 107.
- 'A pigg of myne owne sowe,' i. 112 = a thing of  
of my own invention.
- 'Bungled vpp in more haste then good speede,'  
i. 112.

- 'What lack ye Gentlemen?' and context, i. 113  
 —the then cry of 'prentices at their masters'  
 doors.
- 'A plaster for a broakin pate,' i. 115.
- 'A vertu of necessity,' i. 116.
- 'Howe litle corne was shaken,' i. 126.
- 'Soe farr to seeke agayne,' i. 128.
- 'The burnte child dreadith the fire,' i. 134.
- 'Greatist Clarkes and not wisest men,' i. 137.
- 'One pointe onlye, where I layed a straw,'  
 i. 140 = place where I laid a mark.
- 'Where the shooe pinchith us most, as the begger  
 knoweth his dishe,' i. 145.
- 'The dead bite not,' i. 172.
- 'Comparisons they say are odious,' i. 192.
- 'We are already ouer shooes,' i. 194.
- 'I would wish the burned child not to forget the  
 hot Element,' i. 199.
- 'The flying birde carried meate in the mouth,'  
 i. 200.
- 'Without rime or reason,' i. 203.
- 'With a flea in their eare,' i. 204.
- 'A Lordes heart and a beggars purse,' i. 207.
- 'Diuers circumstances alter the case,' i. 213.
- 'Hath not shaken any suche corne,' i. 215.
- 'More haste then speed,' i. 222.
- 'As good neuer a whit . . . as neuer the better,'  
 i. 230.
- 'The Diuell in the horologe,' i. 276.
- 'The Moonshine in the pudled water,' i. 283.
- 'Better a mischief then an inconvenience,'  
 i. 284.

- 'The burned finger hath reason to startle from the fire,' i. 287.
- 'Driue out one naile with another,' ii. 13.
- 'Turne ouer a Volume of wronges with a wet finger,' ii. 32.
- 'Necessity hath as little free will, as Law,' ii. 35.
- 'Hee that will be made a sheepe, shall find wolues inough,' ii. 38.
- 'As dead as a dore naile,' ii. 71, 113—a door nail being dead in or flush with the wood.
- 'Her mother would neuer have sought her daughter in the Oouen,' etc., ii. 87.
- 'Roome was not reared-vpp in one day,' ii. 133.
- 'Blind men swallowe downe many flyes,' ii. 138.
- 'An vnkinde [= unkinned?] birde that defyleth his kinde neast,' ii. 166.
- 'Softer fier would make sweeter mault,' ii. 177.
- 'Graunt them an inche they will sone take an ell,' ii. 179.
- 'Zeale . . . fly from God's blessing into a warm Sunne,' ii. 207—query is 'God's blessing' = rain?
- 'Neuer a laye in the barrell, better herring,' ii. 217.
- 'Good . . . to be merry and wise,' ii. 247.
- 'Giue the asses head for the washing,' ii. 264.
- 'Warneth me armeth me,' ii. 305.
- 'The rauens croking looseth him many a fatt pray,' ii. 311.
- 'Pig in a poke,' iii. 95—making a bargain at a venture, or without knowing what is bought.

- 'Bore the sillie fellow in hand,' iii. 96 = to keep one politely in expectation. Cf. p. 86, l. 3.
- 'Thowht best to spur cutt,' iii. 97 = make more speed—a 'cut' is a horse generally, they ordinarily being 'curtals' or cut tails.
- Punyes, i. 115 ; ii. 74, 175, 288—freshmen at Oxford were called 'Punies' of the first year.
- Pseudography, i. 104.
- Pumfrittes, M., i. 136.
- Put case, i. 206.
- Putatiue, i. 226, 230.
- Punicall, ii. 175.
- Putana, i. 290.
- Puddle, ii. 12.
- Puppy, ii. 46 ; iii. 13 ; blind, iii. 60.
- Pumps and pantoffles, ii. 81.
- Pudding-pittes, ii. 116—query = pudding-prickes, or the skewers that close the pudding-cloth ?
- Pumpe, ii. 214.
- Purple fish, iii. 20.
- Pynche, iii. 24.
- Pyromachy, ii. 66.

## Q.

- Quadruplicatus, ii. 112.
- Quarrier, i. 144—apparently the comparative of quarry = fat, corpulent.
- Quarrelous, i. 165 ; ii. 37, 43.
- Quauer, ii. 224.
- Quaime, ii. 279.
- Quantities, Spenser's false, i. 100, 101 and onward.
- Queenehith, ii. 40.

Queene Mother, i. 69 = Kath. di' Medici.  
 Queasye, i. 130, 191.  
 Queint, ii. 8, 33, 90, 125, 194, 211, 261, 278, 282, 310,  
 314; iii. 7, 38, 39.  
 Queintly, ii. 296.  
 Quean, ii. 61.  
 Quickscented, ii. 114.  
 Quidditie, i. 46—generally subtleties, but here seem-  
 ingly 'whatnesses.'  
 Quippinge, i. 115; ii. 107.  
 Quippe, etc., 160, 205, 222, 250 = gird or sharp retort.  
 Quiuer, ii. 98.  
 Quinquagenarian, ii. 143.  
 Quittance, cry, iii. 50.

## R.

Rabblement, ii. 275.  
 Rakehell, i. 161, 215, 251; ii. 34, 84, 113, 271, 324, *et freq.*  
 Raye, M., ii. 205.  
 Rauen, white, i. 203; rauens, ii. 20.  
 Rabelays = Rabelais, i. 205, 218, 272.  
 Rascallie, iii. 21.  
 Rascallest, i. 207.  
 Rascality, i. 210.  
 Rascall, ii. 35, 270.  
 Rapping, i. 225.  
 Raines = reins, i. 260.  
 Raunging, i. 288.  
 Railipotent, ii. 17.  
 Rattle, ii. 44.  
 Raleigh, ii. 96.  
 Rampe, ii. 229.



- Ramping, ii. 119.  
 Ragamuffin, ii. 222.  
 Rannell, ii. 229 (cant) = whore.  
 Rampalion, ii. 229.  
 Ramme-alley, ii. 230, 231, 246, 345.  
 Rank-minded, ii. 230.  
 Rattes-bane, ii. 293.  
 Ranker, iii. 21 = rancour: but query misprint for  
     'canker'?  
 Rash, Sir, ii. 339.  
 Rauened, iii. 56.  
 Reacquite, i. 159; ii. 15, 22, 119, 326.  
 Reason, nor rhyme, ii. 48.  
 Reane = rein, curb, ii. 135.  
 Realmes = reams, ii. 213, 219.  
 Reastie = rusty, ii. 231 = rancid, musty.  
 Resolution, i. 6; ii. 291.  
 Regimente, i. 145, 150; ii. 136, 137, 147, 153 = rule.  
 Reuerence, Sir, i. 171; ii. 270—a prefix to something  
     indecorous.  
 Relent, i. 226; ii. 157.  
 Reshining, i. 245.  
 Remonstrances to the Duke de Maine, i. 260.  
 Resplendishing, i. 268; ii. 281, 329.  
 Resplendentest, ii. 266.  
 Respectiue, ii. 10, 19, 139, 160, 270, 291, 312, 321.  
 Renowned, ii. 41.  
 Reuell-rout, ii. 128.  
 Reconciliation, ii. 161-2.  
 Retaliados, ii. 177, 178.  
 Regrated, ii. 263 = retailed.  
 Repulse = refusal, ii. 289.

- Reinolds (*i.e.* Rainolds), Dr. John, ii. 291.  
 Recumbentibus, ii. 302—meaning that he fenced lying  
 down.  
 Remember = remind, iii. 14.  
 Rent-foorth, iii. 25.  
 Rife = frequent, i. 53.  
 Ritche = Lord Rich, i. 125 ; ii. 290.  
 Right-Olympicall, i. 218.  
 Riffe-raffe, ii. 65.  
 Riccolonus, ii. 66.  
 Ripp, ripp, ii. 230—a Nashe phrase = ill-conditioned  
 person ? or = be violent, chide ?  
 Richardo, Don, de Medico, iii. 3.  
 Ropemaker, i., x, xi.  
 Rosalind (Spenser's), i. 6, 81.  
 Rogers, Daniel, i. 107 ; ii. 83.  
 Robin-good-fellow, i. 161 ; ii. 53.  
 Robin Hoodes Library, ii. 53.  
 Roscius, i. 201.  
 Roister, ii. 127.  
 Roister-doister, i. 214 ; ii. 127, 131, 221.  
 Roisterly, i. 169 ; ii. 116, 128, 198, 270.  
 Round = full, i. 197.  
 Rondelet, i. 280.  
 Roome = Rome, i. 295 ; ii. 22, 79, 133, 181, 182, 261,  
 343.  
 Rodomont, Sir, i. 296 ; ii. 225.  
 Roundly, ii. 131 ; iii. 15, 53.  
 Roinish, ii. 229 = mangy, scabby, and hence vile, etc.  
 Rough-hewne, ii. 300.  
 Rod, in lye, ii. 327.  
 Roddes in pisse = pickle ? iii. 34.

Rubbes, ii. 76.  
 Ruffian, in folio, ii. 44; ruffian divine, ii. 268.  
 Ruffianly haire, etc., i. 168, 169, 288; ii. 124, 128, 204.  
 Ruffianisme, ii. 218.  
 Ruffianish, ii. 221.  
 Running, i. 187, 272; ii. 43.  
 Ruffler, ii. 127 = a swaggerer or bully.  
 Ruffe, i. 199.  
 Ruffling, ii. 122, 198.  
 Ruth, i. 251.  
 Rubarbe, i. 260.  
 Rupertus, i. 269.  
 Ruffle, i. 292.  
 Rudhuddibras, ii. 117.  
 Rule, to, ii. 192.  
 Rusty-dusty, ii. 246, 289.  
 Ruinated, ii. 306.  
 Rydge, M., i. 133.

## S.

Sad = serious or grave, i. 40.  
 Satyriall, i. 83.  
 Sanguine, i. 164, 296.  
 Sancebell, i. 217—the sanctus or small bell that called  
 to prayers.  
 Sackeuill, Sir William, i. 246.  
 Sampson's post, i. 262.  
 Saunders, i. 294.  
 Sanedrist, ii. 179 = error for Synedrist?  
 Satterday witt, ii. 229.  
 Saturnists, i. 181; ii. 262.  
 Satchell, fox's, ii. 297.

- Sack-sopt, ii. 345.  
 Said of, iii. 5.  
 Satirist, stirring, iii. 63-4.  
 Scoggin, i. 104, 165, 205 ; ii. 32, 71, 109, 126, 132, 215, 247.  
 Scogginist, ii. 53.  
 Scogginisme, ii. 234.  
 Scott, E. J., Esq., M.A., i., ix, x.  
*School of Abuse*, i. 8 (Gosson's).  
 Scarabe, ii. 251 = beetle, 252.  
 Scaming = scanning? i. 118 (see p. 133, l. 2 from bottom)—to 'scame' is to hurt or injure.  
 Scot-free, i. 163 ; ii. 210.  
 Scammony, i. 260.  
 Sconce = skull, i. 283.  
 Scanderbegging, i. 296.  
 Scoldes, hee and shee, ii. 42.  
 Scab, ii. 46.  
 Scourge, ii. 56.  
 Scarre-crowed = made a scare-crow, ii. 124.  
 Scantly, ii. 206, 207, 243.  
 Scarborough warning, ii. 225, 305—no warning, or a very brief one.  
 Scrat, ii. 266.  
 Scrattops, ii. 230.  
 Schoolebutter, ii. 231.  
 Schollerisme, ii. 275.  
 Scottes 'Witchcraft,' ii. 291.  
 Scabbed, iii. 25.  
 Scalde, iii. 25.  
 Scrupulous, ii. 141.  
 Senarie, i. 21, 22.

- Sende = accompany, iii. 87.  
Secretaries, of Nature, i. 49.  
Secretary-ship, ii. 41.  
Sena, i. 260.  
Septentrionall, ii. 96.  
Securis, John, ii. 131.  
Seeke, are to, ii. 138, 285.  
Serpentine, ii. 20—gunpowder not corned or granulated, but flour-like, and therefore more quickly kindled and quickly out, and so weaker.  
Seniorise, ii. 152.  
Servetus, ii. 164.  
Sectaries, ii. 226.  
Sea-horse, ii. 251.  
Sergeant, six footed, ii. 252.  
Shymeirs, i. 70—a name.  
Shifters, i. 168; ii. 262, 346.  
Shorditch, i. 169.  
Sheep-biter, i. 199, (cant for) thief.  
Shrewdly, i. 205.  
Shot, maine, i. 205=large or cannon shot.  
Shott, small, ii. 46.  
Shotten herring, ii. 130.  
'Shores Wife,' i. 259; ii. 14.  
Shrimpe, ii. 46.  
Sheare, ii. 105.  
Shrouing, ii. 115.  
Sharked, ii. 130.  
Shifted = managed, *i.e.* successfully, iii. 88.  
Shipman's hose, ii. 191.  
Sheepe's-eye, ii. 228.  
Short, or long, ii. 241.

- Shittle = shuttle, ii. 270.  
 Shimmering, ii. 286, 329.  
 Shute, John, ii. 289.  
 Shakerley, booted, ii. 322.  
 Shaddow, iii. 6.  
 Shalbe, iii. 51.  
*Shepherd's Calendar*, i. 90.  
 Shoes, old, iii. 53—renowned Tom Coryat hung up his far-travelled 'shoes' in his parish church, where they were seen within living memories.  
 Sidney, Sir Philip, i., xxxvii onward; xli onward; 7, 8, 9, 17, 36, 75, 76, 86, 182, 210, 217, 234, 246, 266; ii. 21, 23, 50, 67, 84, 99, 100, 101, 102, 254.  
 Singular = individual, i. 56, 228.  
 Singularities, ii. 7, 119.  
 Singularyeth, ii. 111.  
 Sibbe = related or allied, i. 71, 124, 275; ii. 301.  
 Sirra, i. 99; iii. 43.  
 Simple, ii. 45; ii. 197 = simple (simplie).  
 Simplicity, i. 166, 178; iii. 64.  
 Sirenized, i. 212.  
 Six and seauen, i. 239.  
 Sithence, ii. 10, 20, 96.  
 Sinnes, seauen deadly, ii. 90.  
 Sillogistrie, ii. 276.  
 Sith, ii. 191.  
 Sinckanter, iii. 41 = a worn-out old person.  
 Skelton, i. 165, 172; ii. 109, 132.  
 Skill, i. 77, 196; iii. 66.  
 Sky-coloured, i. 266.  
 Skummer, ii. 167.  
 Slaughterdome, i. 165.

- Slaumpaump, i. 282 ; ii. 277—to smear in Leicestershire is to 'slaump.'
- Slicke, ii. 59.
- Slickerly, Kash-swash, i. 295, 296.
- Slasher, ii. 57.
- Sluttish, ii. 252.
- Slug-plum, ii. 283, 323.
- Sleeve, ragged, pulled, i. 207.
- Smith, Henry, ii. 292.
- Smith, Sir Thomas, i., xii, xxv onward ; 76, 241, 246 ; ii. 84, 313.
- Smith, Thomas, i. 184.
- Smoother, iii. 28.
- Smirking, ii. 7, 63.
- Smugg, ii. 59, 296 ; smuggest, ii. 63.
- Smithfield, ii. 246.
- Smoothing, ii. 296.
- Snails, i. 259.
- Snip-snapping, ii. 313, 338 ; iii. 72.
- Snibb, ii. 119.
- Snuffe in, ii. 76.
- Sniwell, ii. 238.
- Snudges, ii. 254.
- Snout-horned, ii. 302.
- Solempure, i. 22.
- Squister, i. 20 ; ii. 42.
- Southwark, i. 102.
- Summer, Will, i. 103 ; ii. 132, 230.
- Synthesetum, i. 201 ; ii. 262.
- Swamp, etc., i. 270.
- Swepth, ii. 7.
- Swives, ii. 48 — cobbiers or shoemakers.

- Somedeaie, ii. 81.  
 Socket-worne, ii. 119.  
 Sosias, two, ii. 250.  
 Sodomies, ii. 271.  
 Southwell, Robert, ii. 291—one is thankful for even this slight recognition of this "sweet Singer." The poem named has the date 1594 on its first publication ; but Harvey must have seen it in 1593.  
 Sokingly, ii. 63.  
 Sober-moode, ii. 295.  
 Span newe, i. 70, 113.  
 Spanyard, i. 175.  
 Spanish industry, i. 192.  
 Spanish Counsellour, ii. 14.  
 Spurgall, i. 205.  
 Spin-up, ii. 252.  
 Spowte, ii. 44.  
 Spagirique, ii. 70, 251.  
 Spenser, Edmund, i., x, xiii, xxiv, xlv, 1; 1 onward ; new poems, 8, 37, 38, 39, 67, 68, 91, 93, 212, 217, 234, 252, 266 ; ii. 15, 24, 50, 83.  
 Spring-tooth, ii. 265.  
 Spritish, ii. 272.  
 Spittle, procter of the, iii. 70.  
 Spittleman, ii. 283.  
 Spider, iii. 60.  
 Springing wit = youthful, i. 219.  
 Springals, i. 235.  
 Squaimishe = squeamish, i. 77.  
 Squeamish, ii. 158.  
 Squibbing, i. 80.  
 Squattering, i. 282.



- Squire = square, ii. 311.  
 Still, i. 9, 63 ; ii. 292.  
 Stale, i. 189, 201 ; ii. 228.  
 Stowte, i. 84.  
 Stirbridge = Stourbridge, i. 113, 116.  
 Steeke, i. 113, 120, 129.  
 Starte-upp, i. 125 ; ii. 313.  
 Stomachous, i. 179, 262 ; stomachious, ii. 197.  
 Stanihurst, i. 182, 218 ; ii. 290.  
 Stratagematically, i. 211.  
 Stilliarde, i. 283 ; ii. 313, 345.  
 Stingers, ii. 226.  
 Styng, ii. 41.  
 Stepp-Tully, ii. 74—he means the person who adopted  
     Tully's name—probably himself—not, as it ought  
     to mean, the person adopted by Tully.  
 Storer, *i.e.* recipient and storer, iii. 96.  
 Stukely, ii. 146.  
 St. Dunston's tongue, i. 281.  
 St. Faithes under Paules, ii. 200.  
 Strokes, flat, ii. 232.  
 Sty, ii. 234.  
 Staring and starkblinde, ii. 235.  
 Starke-madd, ii. 235.  
 Starkest, ii. 280.  
 Stubs, Philip, ii. 280, 291.  
 Stowe, ii. 290.  
 Stocke, iii. 40.  
 Stigmaticall = burned with a hot iron, iii. 41.  
 Stackered, iii. 57.  
 Straw, lay a = to mark a bit to be thought of: here  
     = an obstacle, iii. 86.

- Supplicamusis = prayers and promises; Latin *supplicamus*.
- Super-hartie = heartfelt, i. 1.
- Super-eloquent, ii. 253.
- Super-happy, ii. 170.
- Super-domineering, ii. 17.
- Suruiewe = survey, i. 24, 106; ii. 60.
- Surmounting, i. 202, 290; ii. 10, 55, 65, 254.
- Subboscoes, i. 116, 131—a coinage of Harvey from Italian *bosco* = wood, forest, and used apparently for 'underwood' in metaphorical sense = whiskers.
- Suadas, i. 242, 266; ii. 276.
- Sundaie supper, iii. 75—metaphorical.
- Suttelest, i. 263.
- Superficies, ii. 214.
- Sucket, i. 280.
- Suddes, i. 281.
- Surquedry, i. 291, 297.
- Suffenus, ii. 7, 222. See 'Shakerley.'
- Sufficiencies, ii. 8.
- Supposals, ii. 87.
- Surquidrous, ii. 101.
- Sublimed, ii. 147.
- Sugerloafe, ii. 216.
- Sugar-candy, ii. 254.
- Sutcliffe, ii. 216.
- Superrants, iii. 69.
- Subtercubants, iii. 69.
- Swash, i. 284; ii. 18, 327.
- Swash-pen, ii. 243.
- Swasher, ii. 21.

Swashbuckler, ii. 44.  
 Sweet, ii. 19, 83, 107, 113, 161, 174, 341.  
 Swayed, ii. 46.  
 Sweepe-stake, ii. 111.  
 Swill-boule, ii. 218.  
 Swapped-down, ii. 231.  
 Swad, ii. 237, 287.  
 Swaddish, ii. 273.  
 Swash, Sir, ii. 339.  
 Swish-swash, ii. 339.  
 Syncopes, i. 21.  
 Sysseck in Croatia, i. 260, 264.  
 Sycophant, ii. 37, 38, 77.  
 Synedrion, ii. 142, 177 = a council, *συνεδριον*.

## T.

Taking on, i. 41 = wrangling (as before said), getting into a passion.  
 Tani, i. 105.  
 Tarreeres, i. 118 = loiterings?  
 Tarleton, i. 125, 167, 194, 195, 201, 202, 203, 217  
 ii. 77, 115, 216, 234, 325.  
 Tarletonizing, i. 168, 202.  
 Table-fellow, i. 208.  
 Table-philosophy, ii. 34.  
 Talion, law of, i. 276.  
 Tang, i. 285 ; ii. 90 = savour, generally acrid.  
 Tamberlane, i. 195, 297.  
 Tache, ii. 80.  
 Tacke, ii. 232.  
 Tartaret, ii. 114.  
 Tales of a tubb, ii. 129, 213.

- Tagg, and ragg, ii. 190.  
Talaria, ii. 253.  
Tautologies, ii. 282.  
Talentes = talons, iii. 20.  
Tempering, i. 66.  
Tell tale, i. 120.  
Temporize, i. 124.  
Testerne, cracked, i. 128.  
Teene, i. 285 = sorrow, anger.  
Terme, i. 286.  
Tempany, i. 297 = tympany.  
Temperatest, ii. 12, 25.  
Termagant, i. 46.  
Terribility ii. 105.  
Tee-heegh laughter, ii. 273.  
Testiuenesse, ii. 298.  
Tediousnes, iii. 7.  
*Terminus et non terminus*, iii. 67.  
Three halfpeenny fellowes, i. 67.  
Theoricks, i. 130, 268 ; ii. 205.  
Thrasonical, i. 168 ; ii. 119.  
Thundersmith, i. 206.  
Thrise-grace-full, i. 244.  
Thrise-curteous, thrise-sweet, ii. 5.  
Thinke long, i. 249.  
Thummed, kindly, i. 283.  
Thorius, John, ii. 5, 24, 25, 335, 336, 341, 342, 343, 344.  
Thunderbolteth, ii. 17.  
Thunderblasing, ii. 252.  
Thunder-lightning, ii. 20.  
Throssher = thresher ? ii. 55.  
Theurgy, ii. 90.

- Thwack-coate lane, ii. 126, 217.  
Thalmud, ii. 148.  
Thomas, Syr, of Carleton, anecdote of, iii. 34 = a clergyman.  
Tickle, ii. 57, 152.  
Tittles, i. 25 = trifles; 182 (tittle).  
Tidy, ii. 40.  
Tidely, i. 259.  
Tinsell, i. 279; ii. 321.  
Tinkerly, ii. 128, 280.  
Tinkering, ii. 164.  
Tittle-tattle, ii. 209.  
Tisiphone, ii. 231.  
Tite-tute-tate, ii. 276.  
Toaby, iii. 25.  
Toade, swollen, i. 291.  
Toade-stoole, ii. 273.  
Tobacco, i. 261; ii. 177 ('divine').  
Tomboy, ii. 229.  
Tom Penniles, ii. 121.  
Tom Tooley, i. 69.  
Tom Trothe, i. 83.  
Tongue, iii. 19, 20, 60, 61.  
Tongue, English, i. 266.  
Toss-pot, i. 282; ii. 218, 345.  
Tost, a hot, ii. 173.  
Tonosconcoleros, ii. 88—a name (petitions).  
Topsy-turvy, ii. 131, 176.  
Too-too-malapert, ii. 151.  
Topp-gallant, ii. 236.  
Too-saucie, ii. 250.  
Touch, i. 167.

- Toward, ii. 20.  
Towardest, i. 225.  
Toy, second, i. 189—the first was he who played W.  
Summers in *Summer's Last Will and Testament*.  
Toyes = trifles, i. 16, 189.  
Toyishe, ii. 220.  
Toying = trifling, i. 36.  
Torpedo, iii. 41.  
Treaties, i. 32 ; ii. 274.  
Truely, by my, i. 42, 46.  
Trust-me-trulye, M., i. 128.  
Traine, i. 209.  
Trained = disciplined, i. 166 ; ii. 172.  
Trainement, i. 277, 279.  
Triobular, i. 190 = three-halfpenny.  
Truce, i. 260, 261.  
Treacle, i. 278.  
Tricksie, ii. 8.  
Tricksier, ii. 40 ; tricksiest, ii. 218.  
Trontes, ii. 17.  
Truculentall, ii. 18.  
Trim-tramme, ii. 218.  
Trimmost, ii. 46.  
*Trimming, of Thomas Nashe*, iii. 1 onward.  
Trauers, ii. 48, 152.  
Trigons, ii. 70, 303.  
Trounce, ii. 71, 272.  
Trumpington ford, ii. 90.  
Triplication, ii. 112.  
Triplcity, ii. 303.  
Transcripting, ii. 123.  
Trish-trash, ii. 218, 339.

- Trusse, ii. 220.  
 Truthable, ii. 276.  
 Trey, ii. 316.  
 Trochilus, iii. 22.  
 Transmigration, iii. 24.  
 Trussed up, iii. 28.  
 Trapped creatures, iii. 48.  
 Trapperd, iii. 56.  
 Turlled, ii. 150 = twirled?  
 Turlers, i. 26—a proper name.  
 Turlery-ginkes, ii. 246 = twirling and 'jinks,' =  
     thoughtless merriment.  
 Turke, i. 262, 263, 264.  
 Tuscanisme, ii. 19, 51.  
 Tuck, i. 282.  
 Turnecoate, i. 288; ii. 316.  
 Tusser, ii. 273.  
 Tutt, ii. 273.  
 Tumbler, ii. 283.  
 Twitched, ii. 122, 246 ('twitch').  
 Twigging, ii. 129—either = a knowing Sophister or  
     = a beating S.—for it has both senses.  
 Twanged, ii. 212.  
 Tyhying = tee-heeing, or exclaiming 'tee-hee,' i. 61.  
     See under 'Tee-heegh.'  
 Tyranise, ii. 155.

## U.

•• Spelled with 'v' for 'u' in many cases.

- Umphrye, i. 126.  
 Unable, iii. 35.  
 Unappeasable, ii. 252.

Unbutton, ii. 124.  
 Unconuersable, ii. 275.  
 Uncouth, i. 242.  
 Undauntable, ii. 112.  
 Unexilable, ii. 275.  
 Undecency, ii. 291.  
 Underhill, Dr., ii. 292.  
 Undecent, i. 135.  
 Under, iii. 51.  
 Underlie, i. 176 ; ii. 9.  
 Undiscreete, i. 180.  
 Unfriendly, i. 111.  
 Ungentle, i. 210.  
 Unguent, ii. 80.  
 Uniformitie, ii. 160.  
 Unhandsoming, ii. 276  
 Unhonest, i. 135.  
 Unlace, ii. 124.  
 Unnoble, i. 210 ; ii. 98.  
 Unicorne, i. 223.  
 Unlectured, ii. 289.  
 Unpartially, i. 177.  
 Unpossible, i. 116.  
 Unrecurable, iii. 24.  
 Unsensible = insensible, i. 54.  
 Unsufficient, i. 141.  
 Untrust, iii. 50 = untagged or unbuttoned ; or not  
 trussed.  
 Untrusse, i. 202.  
 Unpartially, ii. 8.  
 Unsatisfiable, ii. 8.  
 Unmatchable, ii. 19



Unpolished, ii. 25.  
 Unlaunched, ii. 65.  
 Unico, ii. 223.  
 Unworth, i. 190; ii. 224.  
 Unlineall, ii. 276.  
 Upholster, ii. 237.  
 Upsy-downe, ii. 145.  
 Urcheon, ii. 46, 239.  
 Urring tanye, iii. 75—an apparent misprint or misreading of the MS., but the Editor can't elucidate.  
 Urany, ii. 17.  
 Ursa major & minor, iii. 67.  
 Usance, ii. 310.  
 Utopian, leather suits, iii. 65.  
 Uttering = publishing, i. 6.

## V.

VV double, ii. 131, 209, 211, 216, 217 = Lyly.  
 Vallanger, M., i. 100.  
 Vawsis, i. 125—apparently = 'company of players,' but more the Editor knoweth not.  
 Vanity, i. 166.  
 Valiancy, i. 263; ii. 105.  
 Valiantest, ii. 100.  
 Validity, i. 290.  
 Vacantest, ii. 16.  
 Varlets, ii. 340; iii. 68.  
 Vagation = wandering about, iii. 53.  
 Venterously, i. 22 = venturously, boldly.  
 Veale = veil, i. 36; ii. 161.  
 Ventes = openings, i. 44.  
 Vengibly = vengefully, i. 49; ii. 77, 87, 115, 129.

Vengeablest, ii. 231.  
 Verdit = verdict, i. 60.  
 Verlayes, i. 111—Fr. *virelay*, a round or rondeau.  
 Venetias, i. 128.  
 Venetian State, i. 264.  
 Ventositye, i. 261.  
 Verdure, ii. 102, 115.  
 Verifiable, ii. 116.  
 Verticall, starre, ii. 266.  
 Vendiblest, ii. 312.  
 Vice, i. 189.  
 Vice-master of Paules, ii. 212.  
 Victorye, i. 136.  
 Vie, ii. 128.  
 Villan, ii. 319.  
 Virginall, i. 266.  
 Vises = vices? iii. 17.  
 Viperous, ii. 20, 37, 38.  
 Voluntarile, i. 113.  
 Voutesafe, i. 116, 118, 181, 238; ii. 15.  
 Vulcanist, ii. 177.  
 Vulgarly, ii. 275.

## W.

Watson, Thomas, i. 22, 23, 112, 218; ii. 83, 171, 290.  
 Warwick's players, i. 125.  
 Wainscot, faced, ii. 229; forehead, ii. 117; indentures  
 of, ii. 236.  
 Walsingham, i. 246.  
 Walladay, i. 282.  
 Washeth, one hand another, i. 269.  
 Warrantise, i. 285.

- Water, ii. 209.  
Waiment, i. 296.  
Water, dry, ii. 69.  
Waged, ii. 98.  
Waites, ii. 99.  
Warlic, ii. 104 = adj. from 'war,' here = war (horse).  
Walles, painted, ii. 173.  
Wakefield, ii. 215, 216.  
Wasp, ii. 233.  
Warner, ii. 290.  
Warden, ii. 308 = a special kind of pear.  
Wastage, iii. 27.  
Well-willer = well-wisher.  
Wellaway, i. 264.  
Well, in Idumea, i. 271.  
Weeneth, ii. 125.  
White, i. 65.  
Whole = hole, i. 138.  
Whetstone, clerks of, i. 165 ; ii. 211, 215 ; iii. 17 = liars.  
Whetstone, George, ii. 290.  
Whitgift, i. 234 ; ii. 291.  
Whood = hood, i. 241.  
Whot, i. 143 ; ii. 92 = hot.  
Whottest, ii. 47, 178.  
Whitest white, i. 244.  
Whitled, i. 282 = cut down (with a knife)—now an Americanism.  
Whitling, ii. 90.  
Whurlewinde, ii. 17.  
Whiteliuer'd, ii. 17.  
Whimwhams, ii. 44 = trifles or triflers.  
Whitches, ii. 48.

- Whatchicaltes, ii. 57, 194—what-do-ye-calls?  
 Whipsters, ii. 63.  
 What is what, ii. 116.  
 Whoodwinked = hoodwinked, ii. 135. See under  
 'Whood.'  
 Whoop-hod, ii. 273.  
 Whist, whuist, ii. 79, 89, 278 = whist, be silent.  
 Whenas, iii. 52.  
 What = that, iii. 53.  
 Wilton, Rev. Richard, M.A., i., xviii.  
 Wilson, comedian, i. 125; ii. 24; secretary, i. 182;  
 ii. 84.  
 Williamson, M., i. 128.  
 Wis, i. 182.  
 Wiste, i. 137.  
 Wise man, ii. 47.  
 Williams, Sir Roger, ii. 99.  
 Wilding tree, ii. 110 = crab-apple tree.  
 Withie, ii. 110.  
 Withernam, ii. 126, 217.  
 Wisp, ii. 230, 240.  
 Wispen, ii. 229.  
 Winch, ii. 239, 246.  
 Wickham, M., ii. 292.  
 Wisdome, ii. 309.  
 Wit, a good—defined, iii. 33.  
 Wood, Anthony a-, i., xi, xii, xiv.  
 Wood, John, i., xxviii, xxix.  
 Worshipful, i., xlv, 5.  
 Would, i. 76; ii. 143, *et freq.* = should.  
 Wolfe's print = a drastic reference to Wolte the  
 publisher, i. 236.

- Wolfe, John, i. 259.  
 Word, last, ii. 43.  
 Woonderments, ii. 60.  
 Woonder-clout, ii. 270, 339.  
 Woodcocke, ii. 125.  
 Woolner, ii. 231.  
 Worme, loouing, ii. 247.  
 Worme, in dog's tongue, iii. 57—really a thin tendon.  
 Wrigleth, ii. 52.  
 Wretcheckes, i. 148—according to Gifford 'wretch-  
       chocks' are the smallest of a brood of domestic  
       chickens. This suits the text.  
 Wrinch, ii. 115, 167.  
 Wring, ii. 151.  
 Wutton, Sir Henry, Wotton, i. 72.  
 Wythipole, i. 20 (a name).

## X.

- Xenophon, English, ii. 99.  
 Xenophontian, ii. 99.

## Y.

- Yarking, ii. 44 = beating or kicking.  
 Yer = ere, i. 174.  
 Yerbe, ii. 44 = jerk or beat.  
 Yl-willers, i. 6.  
 Young, Dr., bp. of Rochester, i., xiii. ; ii. 84, 291.  
 Yonker, i. 192.  
 Yonkerly = youthful, i. 24, 26, 99 ; ii. 196.  
 Younkers, ii. 207.  
 Ypocrase, i. 278 ; ii. 246, 265 = hippocras—a drink of  
       wine, spices, and sugar.  
 Ywisse, i. 23, 73. See under 'I wis.'

## Z.

Zeale, ii. 174, 340.

Zelotists, ii. 173.

Zuingers, i. 26,—qu. Zwingli ?

---

CHIEF POINTS IN 'MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION—  
CRITICAL.'

°° The quotations from Harvey, etc., have already been incorporated in the Glossarial-Index.

Broad verdict on Life and Writings of Harvey, iii., vii.

1. *On the 'dead' GREENE*, iii., vii-xii.—Aggravation of malignancy and infamy of attacks specially illustrated by references to the deceased Author's last letter, vii-ix; "Epitaphes and Funerall Deuotions" published by Harvey, ix; balanced sentences of reiterated scandals and gossip, x; allegations of obscenity falsified by Greene's books, xi; self-ignorance and sanctimoniousness suggestive of 'reproof' in *Measure for Measure*, xi; his "superior airs" preposterous, xii.

2. *On the 'dead' MARLOWE*, iii., xii-xvi.—No recognition of his genius, xii; Mr. A. H. Bullen on Harvey's *Newe Letter*, and supposed death of Marlowe by the Plague, xii-xiv; commentary on the 'Sonet' and 'Glosse,' xv; Marlowe's ridicule of the Harveys, xv-xvi; sneers at Marlowe's (mythical) irreligion and debauchery, xvi; his tragic end told (probably) with untrue accretions, xv; no wonder Shakespeare is left unnamed by Harvey, xvi.

3. *On the 'dead' PERNE*, iii., xvi-xviii.—A long-forgotten name, yet to be recalled as exemplifying

Harvey's cowardice added to his malignancy, xvi; dates, xvi; intended posthumous revenge (foot-note), xvii; extraordinary word-portrait of the Dean, Harvey's most able literary achievement, xviii; none the less his rancour and uncharity neutralized all powers and possibilities, xviii.

4. *The 'living'* NASHE, iii., xix-xxiii.—A Roland for an Oliver, xix; Nashe's offer of reconciliation rejected, xix; ludicrous 'contempt' for Nashe, xix-xx; Harvey's adaptations from and references to Nashe words and phraseology, xix-xx; Nashe's gossip-data not denied, xxi; Nashe words, xxi; Mercy Harvey's story—corrections of mistakes, and verdict, xxi-iii.

5. *The COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE*, iii., xxiii-xxiv.—References under 'Gentlewoman' and 'Pembroke' prove Harvey's fore-announced 'Defender' to have been "Sidney's sister, Pembroke's mother," xxiii; Queen Elizabeth the "one" always excepted, xxiii-iv.

Certain *memorabilia*, but the broad verdict left untouched, xxiv; easy to have increased 'Works,' xxiv; a hitherto unprinted letter from Harvey to Cecil, from Hatfield MSS., xxv-viii; curious contemporary notice of the Harvey-Nashe quarrel, xxviii-ix; contemporary MS. now first printed, entitled "The Trimming of Tom Nashe," xxix-xxxiii; Dekker's judgment on Nashe *versus* Harvey, xxxiii; Dr. Brinsley Nicholson's helpfulness, xxxiv.

A. B. G.

END OF VOL. III.

FINIS.